

A chain of thought is only as strong as the weakest link.

# The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational

How to Know the Truth  
and be Set Free



Scientia

# **The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational**

## **How You Can Know the Truth and be Set Free**

**Petros B. Scientia**

Real Reality Books  
Portage, Wisconsin

Real Reality Books



### **Advance Reading Copy Notice**

This document is likely to change since it's an advance reading copy (ARC). To assure you have the latest version, navigate to:

<http://RealReality.org/downloads>.

You can expect that this book will change over time. Check back at the Real Reality, Inc. website and get your copy of the finished book for free when the book goes to print and this is no longer an advance reading copy. You'll know because this notice will no longer appear.

<http://RealReality.org/downloads>

I'm looking for beta readers who would be willing to contribute to the writing of this book. If you're interested, contact me at [Petros@PetrosBScientia.com](mailto:Petros@PetrosBScientia.com).

### **Beta Readers Needed!**

Would you consider being a beta reader? A beta reader reads a book and gives feedback to the author so the author can improve the book before the book is printed. Would you like to do that?

If so, you can help identify errors of any kind. I'm interested in your insights. Please contact Petros through this Facebook page:

<https://www.facebook.com/knowingrealreality/>



Copyright © 2015, 2018 by Petros B. Scientia

All rights reserved. Please reproduce, distribute, and transmit this book intact in every form and by every means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods. Use quotations as permitted by copyright law. Email this eBook to everyone you love. Use messenger or text. Send this link: <http://RealReality.org/downloads> to everyone you know.

The use of a quotation doesn't necessarily imply endorsement of the person or source of the quotation or the information in the quotation.

Library of Congress Control Number:2019917818

Publisher's Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Names: Scientia, Petros B., author.

Title: The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational : How to Know the Truth and be Set Free / Petros B. Scientia.

Series: The Real Faith & Reason Library

Description: Poynette, WI: Real Reality Books, 2020

Identifiers: LCCN 2019917818 | ISBN 978-0-9860972-9-4

Subjects: LCSH Syllogism. | Christianity--Philosophy. | Logic. | BISAC RELIGION / Philosophy | YOUNG ADULT NONFICTION / Philosophy | PHILOSOPHY / Epistemology

Classification: LCC BR100 .S372 2020 | DDC 261.5/1--dc23

# THE NUTS AND BOLTS OF BEING RATIONAL

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

### Rational Thought

#### Lack of Truth

- Why is the World so Crazy?
- The Critical Question
- The Secret Key
- Cognitive Dissonance
  - Emotions
  - Preconceptions
  - Liars
  - Peers
  - Weakness

#### Truth Will Set You Free

- Set Free
- Continue In Christ's Utterance
- Double Minded
- All your Ways
- Spiritual Adultery
- Intellectualism

#### God's Endgame

- Relevance
- Where you Are
- Panorama
- Seeing the Vision
- Jesus is your Wisdom
  - Righteousness
  - Holiness or Sanctification
  - Redemption, Set Free
  - The Flowing Stream
  - Christ Will Return

#### In Practice

- Making Progress
- Discernment and Maturity
- The Unity and Fulfillment

### How Logic Works

#### Nuts and Bolts

#### Deductive, Inductive, Abductive

- Deductive Reasoning
- Inductive Reasoning
  - Inductive Generalization:
  - Statistical Syllogism:
  - Simple Induction:
  - Argument from Analogy:

- Causal Inference:
- Argument from Prediction:
- Bayesian Inference
- Inductive Inference

### **Abductive Reasoning**

- How to Enter His Presence
- Can you Be Deceived?
- Warnings

### **The Three Types of Reasoning**

## **Extreme Limits**

### **Why It's Important**

### **How Do They Survive?**

- The Logos is the Light
- The Brute Beast
- The Prince of Power

### **Relativism and Post-Modernism**

### **Three Unacceptable Choices?**

- Proving Proof, Circles, Claims, and Other Smoke
- Five Choices, Not Three
- Divine Revelation, What They Don't Want

### **Experts and Intellectuals**

- The Godless Outlook

### **Information Warfare**

- Repeated From Many Sources
- Fake Polls
- New Normal
- Message-Control

### **False Knowledge**

- Religious Scientism
  - Not Really Science
  - Inconsistency
  - Conspiracy?
  - Reliability Rules
- False Knowledge

### **The Formally-Correct Fallacy**

- Agreeing on Premises

## **Blurring the Line**

### **Defining Fallacies**

### **Categories**

#### **Sir Francis Bacon's Four Idolas**

- Idola-Tribus Fallacy
- Idola-Theatri Fallacy
- Idola-Fori Fallacies
  - Type 1 Idola Fori:
  - Type 2 Idola Fori:
- Idola-Specus Fallacy

### **Worldviews**

Formal or Informal  
Axiomatic or Smokescreen

## **Conclusions**

## **REFERENCE**

## **The Rules**

### **Three Rules of Logic**

The Law of Identity  
The Law of Noncontradiction  
The Law of the Excluded Middle

### **Requirements for Sound Logic**

## **More Than You Wanted to Know About Syllogisms**

### **Nobody Talks that Way**

### **Types of Syllogisms**

### **Categorical Syllogisms**

Four Types of Categorical Statements  
Six Rules for Valid Categorical Syllogisms  
Conversions—Rules for reversal of subject and predicate:  
Each premise has one term in common with the conclusion:  
The conclusions “All P are S” or all “All P are M” would be fallacious and invalid form.

### **Mood**

### **Symbols**

### **Abbreviations for categorical sentences:**

### **Figure**

### **Valid Forms**

Perfect Syllogisms  
Fifteen Unconditionally Valid Forms:  
Valid only if S exists:  
Valid only if M exists:  
Valid only if P exists:

### **Formal Syllogistic Fallacies**

### **Hypothetical Syllogisms**

Kinds of Hypothetical Syllogism:  
Mixed Hypothetical Syllogisms:  
Four Forms of Mixed Hypothetical Syllogisms:  
Valid forms:  
Invalid forms or pretenders:

### **Conditional Syllogisms**

### **Mixed Conditional**

Affirm antecedent; then affirm consequent (valid)  
Deny consequent; then deny antecedent (valid)  
Purely Conditional

## Invalid Forms and their Respective Fallacies

Fallacy of Affirming the Consequent (not valid: ACq)

Fallacy of Denying the Antecedent (not valid: DA)

## Disjunctive Syllogisms

Denying the first disjunct and affirming the second (valid)

Denying the second disjunct and affirming the first (valid)

Fallacy of Affirming a Disjunct (AD):

Affirming the Disjunct (not valid: AD)

## Conjunctive Syllogisms

Fallacy of Denying a Conjunct (not valid: DCj)

## Dilemmas

### Constructive Dilemmas

Simple Constructive Dilemma:

Complex Constructive Dilemma:

### Destructive Dilemmas

Simple Destructive Dilemma:

Complex Destructive Dilemma:

### Rules for Dilemmas

## Sorites

If you state the conclusions:

Rule 1: Negative Premise-Negative Conclusion

Rule 2: Particular Premise- Particular Conclusion

## Epicheremes

## Enthymemes

### Three Orders of Enthymemes

First Order: omitted major premise

Second Order: omitted minor premise

Third Order: omitted conclusion

## Nine Rules of Inference

Modus Ponens (M.P.)

Modus Tollens (M.T.)

Hypothetical Syllogism (H.S.)

Disjunctive Syllogism (D.S.)

Conjunction (Conj.)

Constructive Dilemma (C.D.)

Simplification (Simp.)

Absorption (Abs.)

## Definitions

## Further Study

## Acknowledgments

## About this Book

## Free Stuff

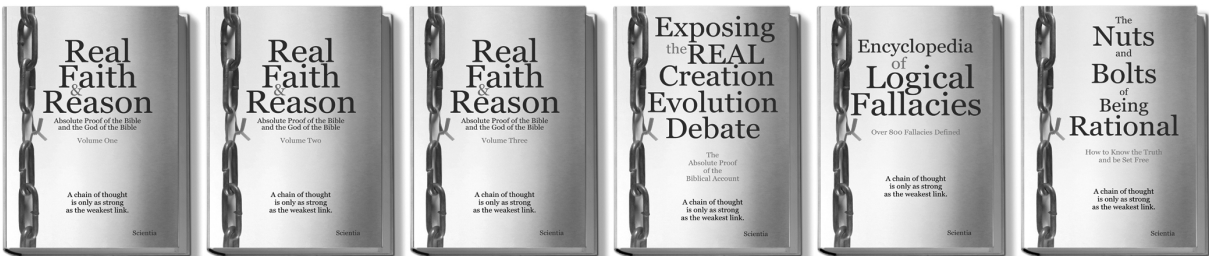
# The Foundation of Real Faith & Reason Library

## About the Author



## This Book is Part of the Real Faith & Reason Library

**FREE**  
**as eBooks**



- **The three-volume set of *Real Faith & Reason* is a journey of spiritual growth and discernment.**
  - *Real Faith & Reason Volume One*
  - *Real Faith & Reason Volume Two*
  - *Real Faith & Reason Volume Three*
- **This is a listing of the Bible verses used in *Real Faith & Reason*.**
  - *Real Faith & Reason Scripture References*
- ***Exposing the REAL Creation-Evolution Debate* points the way to knowing Christ through the example of a debate between two men over the topic of Creation versus Evolution.**
  - *Exposing the REAL Creation-Evolution Debate*

- **The *Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies* details over 700 fallacies and logic terms with examples.**
  - *Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies*
- **The *Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational* goes into the nitty-gritty of the elements of rational thought and how to keep yourself from irrational traps in thinking.**
  - *The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational*

You can download FREE Ebooks in Epub, Mobi, and PDF formats from:

<http://RealReality.org/downloads/>.

# Rational Thought



How do you keep yourself from falling into the insanity you're seeing all around you? How can you escape the deception? Have you ever wondered whether you've already been deceived and don't know it? And how can you know the truth? Those are the questions. Knowing the answers to those questions will change your life.

I'll start by carefully defining the problem. Then, I'll wrap up the first chapter by explaining *God's Endgame*, which is God's glorious and surprising solution to the problem. After that, you'll explore the following together:

- How logic works
- Three ways of looking at fallacies
- How fallacies blur the distinction between reality and make-believe
- The simple rules of logic
- The various kinds of reasoning
- Formal logic and syllogisms
- Definitions of difficult words
- Further study

## Lack of Truth



## Why is the World so Crazy?

When you think it can't get crazier, it goes to a new level of insanity. Why is this happening?

It's because that's what happens when the culture removes truth. You started hearing the term "post-truth" around 2016, but the fall from truth happened long before that. It became popular with something called "postmodernism" around the 1970s. Relativism and skepticism go way back in time. However, it actually began when the serpent in the Garden of Eden asked, "Did God really say that?" More people have accepted the "no-truth" fantasy now. And you're just seeing the fruit of it.

Here's the problem. If you are going to think rationally, you must base your thinking on truth. Truth is absolute by definition. When the train of logic leaves the track of truth, it can go anywhere. It can dream up anything. ANYTHING!

The train of logic leaves the track of truth with the first assumption. Let me give you an illustration of how powerful assumptions are. If you allow me one assumption, I can use valid logical form to prove you don't exist. Let's assume you don't exist.

You don't exist.

Therefore, you don't exist.

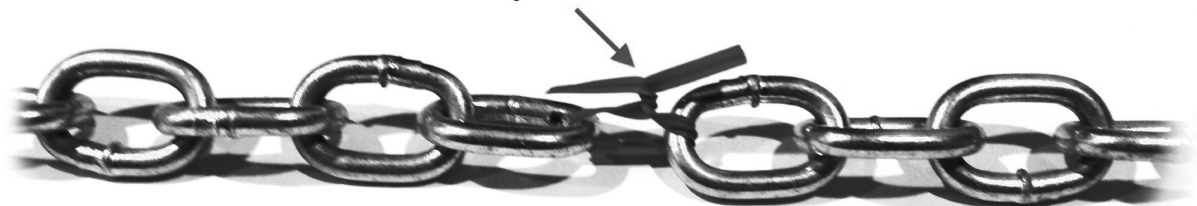
Do you want to prove anything else? The same process will work perfectly. If you want to prove God doesn't exist, just use Naturalism and Materialism as axioms. Both of those assume God doesn't exist. From there, your work is easy. Do you want to prove the Genesis Flood didn't happen? Just assume Uniformitarianism. Uniformitarianism assumes the Genesis Flood didn't happen. From there, your work is done.

So that's why the world has gotten to where it is. Is there anywhere you can go to get the truth? You catch the news media lying to you repeatedly. They twist the truth and make your head spin. The schools let you down. Theologians disagree about how to interpret the Bible. Scientists disagree about how to interpret the observations. You hear so many conflicting stories all around you that you don't know which liar to believe.

Without truth, real knowledge can't exist. You just hear liars parroting meaningless memorized sayings and opinions. Without truth, there is no morality. Without truth, you can't have ethics.

Without truth, you have no purpose. Your life can have no meaning if there is no truth. Without truth, you have only emptiness and manipulation. Your life becomes a game with no right or wrong but only winners and losers. When the intellectuals removed truth from reason, they also destroyed sanity.

**Assumption - Zero Truth Value**



**A chain of thought is only as strong as its weakest link.**

Once truth is gone, reason can justify anything. Here's how the insanity works with morality. Everyone has an internal fake-morality. It's not real. It's contrived, but each person's fake-morality feels real to that person. Sometimes, through peer pressure and groupthink, a clique of people will share certain elements of a common fake-morality. However, their group-held fake-morality is also fake. It's artificial. Groupthink can limit you. Groupthink limits most people in the world. They call it "common knowledge," but it's not knowledge of the truth. It's just a fabrication a lot of people believe.

#### **RATIONALISM**

Rationalism is irrational. Rationalism is assuming and trying to make those assumptions seem rational.  
It's a method of trying to make irrational thinking seem rational.

I'm not talking about everyone. I'm talking about those who think without God. I could call them godless thinkers. Godless thinkers use rationalizations to justify their fake-moralities. Godless thinkers may be religious, but they reason without God. You can reason by rationalizing, but you aren't sane if you rationalize. If you rationalize, your reasoning is irrational. If you rationalize, you use fallacies to make irrational thinking appear rational. That's why people disagree about morality.

## **Moralizers**

So, each moralizer draws a line in the sand and says, “I’m a moral person and I won’t cross this line.” And yet, it’s just a line in the sand. Moralizers look at all the possible evil acts. Then, each moralizer claims certain evil acts are “OK.” Others are “not OK.” That’s the line in the sand. And yet, under certain conditions, any ungodly thinker can move his or her line in the sand. Ungodly thinkers can move the lines because they drew the lines in the first place. They based their lines in the sand on foundations like these:

- Emotions
- random thoughts
- peer pressure
- inner paradigms
- interpretations of past experiences
- interpretations of observations
- interpretations of the Bible
- ideas they were taught
- other changeable thinking

Their lines are arbitrary and moveable, so you can never pin them down. Without truth, they have no real morality, integrity, knowledge, purpose, or meaning. Without truth, their entire world is shakable. They have nothing solid.

And morality is just one part of life. God is shaking every part of your life. God has been shaking everything. God is shaking all the so-called authorities and voices you trusted, and He’s exposing their corruption. You have a sense God is going to continue to expose the false prophets and false teachers of this age who proclaim lies from their newsrooms and classrooms. You see the newsrooms and universities falling from their high perches as God shakes their trees. You see scientists and teachers promoting ideas so insane they lose all credibility with anyone who has a hint of wisdom or understanding. God is exposing these and other false prophets and false teachers so you have the chance to choose. You have a choice. You can either love the lies or reject and expose the lies. You can choose the truth.

And yet, many people are still following these false prophets and false teachers. The false prophets and teachers are drawing them in.

And those who follow the lies enjoy it. They like it that way. They want to follow the false prophets and false teachers.

Look who they're following. Most scientists, politicians, media personalities, theologians, philosophers, and scholars have strong opinions about topics when they know little or nothing about those topics. And yet, thousands or millions want to follow them if they're celebrities or authorities. It's as if those following the false prophets and false teachers are blind and can't see. They're in darkness. They love darkness rather than the Light. They hate the Light and turn away from it.

If you listen to the false prophets and false teachers, they are likely to influence your view of the world. They want to influence you, but that's not all. They also want to control the way you think about reality. They want to form a fake-reality within you. They want to dictate morality to you. They will likely influence your morality if you listen to them. If you allow Hollywood to influence your morality, you will be immoral. They are experts at psychological operations and mass brainwashing. If you give yourself to ungodly music, you will be immoral. If you allow the godless news programs to influence your morality, you will be immoral. If you allow ungodly scholars and experts to influence you, you will be immoral.

Here's the problem. You can't know anything for certain without absolute truth. If your thoughts aren't based on absolute truth, then your thoughts are mere opinions. I've been guilty of this. I've had God speak to me and tell me that I based my thinking on nothing at all. That shook me to my core.

So, how can anyone even survive without truth? If a person without truth can't be rational, wouldn't every person in this predicament live in poverty or die quickly at a young age? It doesn't work that way. I'll explain how that works in a section titled *How Do They Survive?* Irrational people do get into high positions and do live what appear to be normal lives. Just think of some people you've seen in top positions and the poor decisions they've made.

The world has gone crazy because it has no truth. Intellectuals make many bizarre claims.

Here's what can happen to you. Over the months and years, you can start to feel comfortable with their bizarre claims. You can become numb. After a while, some old bizarre claims don't sound so crazy anymore even though they're just as crazy as when you first heard them. You may have resisted the lunacy at first, but the crazy people persisted and repeated their messages until those messages sounded normal to you. You became as crazy as the crazy people because you let them normalize insanity for you. You internalized craziness. You let craziness become part of your inner concept of reality.

I hope you've escaped this insanity. It's almost impossible. It takes a miracle to escape.

And new bizarre claims keep coming. The new claims may sound wild for now, but you'll accept them if you aren't careful. Then, you'll be just as idiotic as the elite intellectuals who made the claims in the first place.

The intellectuals and power-brokers try to enforce their ideas by appealing to political correctness. If you don't blindly believe their nonsense, they try to destroy you. They shame you. They call you names. If you don't agree with their insanity, they imply you're ignorant, insane, or evil. They judge you to be politically incorrect and a bad person. They judge you according to their immoral thinking. They call you "judgmental." They call you "closed-minded."

I understand political correctness. It morphed from something called "the new morality." I understand the new morality because it's the old foolishness and self-righteousness mixed with the old immorality.

There's a reason the intellectuals come up with irrational ideas. It's not that they're stupid. They're intelligent. Lack of intelligence isn't the problem. The problem is they aren't reasoning from truth. Schools have stopped teaching students that sound reasoning must always begin with the truth. That's because those who are running the show don't believe finding the truth is possible.

I want to assure you that you can know the truth. When I say "know the truth," I mean knowing with certainty. You can be certain

about what is true and what is false. You can know what's right and what's wrong. However, there's a secret to it. There's a way to know the truth, but you need the key. How many people understand the secret? Before you're finished, I'll show you the secret key to knowing the truth and knowing the difference between truth and error.

## **The Critical Question**

"How do you know?" That's one of the most important questions you could ever ask anyone. Not only should you ask others, but each of you ought to ask yourself that question many times each day. "How do you know?" Asking that question should be a habit. When someone tries to persuade you, you can ask that question. You could phrase your question several different ways. "What makes you think so?" "What gives you that idea?" "What's the basis of your thinking on that?" "How do you arrive at that conclusion?"

It's a tough question, and few people can answer it rationally regardless of the subject. Most people drift off into the land of make-believe or suddenly leave the conversation because they don't want to think things through.

Don't let the tactics of godless thinkers deceive you when you ask them how they know. Godless thinkers offer proofs that don't prove what they're trying to prove. They offer proofs, but they have no proof of the proofs. They offer proofs that aren't necessarily true. And they end in an infinite regression of unproved proofs. They resort to name-calling, emotion, intimidation, ridicule, or bullying. They just insist they are correct about whatever opinion they have, and they ask you to believe their claims without proving the claims are true. Don't let them fool you. Don't let them wear you out.

The question is, "How do you know?" Have you ever asked this question without getting a solid answer? Did someone avoid answering you? Did they give you a ridiculous answer?

Almost everyone believes in miraculous revelation. Few will admit it. Most never even admit it to themselves. Many base their thoughts on a form of miraculous revelation called "Rationalism." Rationalists are particularly sensitive and defensive about this since they think they are the rational ones. Rationalism is irrational. Rationalism is

assuming and trying to make those assumptions seem rational. It's a method of trying to make irrational thinking seem rational.

Formal philosophies of Rationalism exist. Rationalist philosophers believe the human mind can self-generate truth without the benefit of divine revelation or observation. They believe all humans have goodness in them. They deny the biblical doctrine of original sin. They claim human intellect can reason to the truth. And that's a circular reasoning fallacy. Rationalism makes human intellect into a god.

Satan started the philosophy of Rationalism in the Garden of Eden when He said, "You shall be as gods knowing both good and evil." Rationalism surged among philosophers around 570 years before Christ. It surged again during the so-called "Enlightenment" starting around 1635 in France. Rationalistic thinking is ungodly thinking. It denies that all truth, wisdom, knowledge, understanding, righteousness, holiness, and freedom from sin are found only in Christ. And it denies original sin. In the early 1700s, rationalists opposed the Great Awakening. Not too many years later, rationalists opposed the Second Great Awakening.

The battle continues to the present. The fight is still between made-up stuff and divine revelation. Naturalism and Materialism became popular doctrines in the 1600s. Charles Lyell and Charles Darwin worked to denigrate the Bible in the 1800s. From the start, the rationalists resorted to appeal-to-ridicule fallacies and appeal-to-popularity fallacies. When those didn't work, they went to message-control and censorship. When those didn't work, they resorted to violence and coercion. That continues to this day. Rationalism was confined to the Unitarian Church at first, but the infection spread. You can see it today in many religious and secular organizations.

Rationalists are trapped by their own corrupted minds. Thoughts become strongholds and then become chains dragging the thinker into ever descending spirals and finally into death. Rationalists do this without realizing they're in bondage. Thinking they're rational, they're in a form of insanity. Thinking they are free, they become slaves to the lower elements.

Most people think they have knowledge. And yet, they can't tell you where they got that knowledge. They got it from a book, a class, or a show. However, they can't tell you why they think that book, class, or show is telling them the truth. Maybe they can give you a reason for their belief, but why do they trust that reason? Eventually, they can't answer the question of how they know. They come to a point of miraculous revelation. They might think their "miraculous mind" can make up stuff that's automatically true. They might think people with letters behind their names have this "miraculous ability." They might think celebrities or news personalities are "miraculous in their thinking." In some way, they believe in "miraculous revelation" even if they refuse to admit it.

Have you ever asked this question of yourself? Were you able to come up with an ironclad reason to believe what you believe? Was your reason based on truth? How do you know what you call "truth" is the truth?

What if you suddenly found out your most cherished beliefs were all false? What if you found out you were missing the most important, exciting, and fulfilling elements of life? Just imagine that for a moment. Consider how you would feel. It's not a happy thought, but it's worth thinking long and hard about.

Stop for a few moments. Don't just lightly consider those questions without seriously answering them. They're too important to gloss over. Give it some serious thought.

The Bible speaks to you about those who are forever learning but never coming to the knowledge of the truth. No one wants to be part of that group. Fortunately, the remedy is **NOT difficult**. At the same time, some people may have trouble admitting they need the remedy because they don't want to allow reality to correct their firmly-established worldviews. Humility is uncomfortable. Changing your mind is hard.

Even if some of what you believe is wrong, you can find your errors and correct them. It's OK to be on the road to a destination when you're heading toward the destination. You haven't arrived, but at least you're on the way.

It's NOT good to be on the wrong road that will never get you to your destination. It's not good to be trying to find the truth where no truth can be found. However, getting on the right road that leads to truth is within your grasp. Like I said, you need to know the secret.

## **The Secret Key**

Suppose you limited yourself to the human mind alone. Then, the only way you could know anything would be to know everything about everything. You would have to be all-knowing and incapable of being wrong. You would have to be absolutely pure so no lie could fool you. No human meets that standard. Thankfully, you know Someone Who knows everything, Who can't lie, Who can't be deceived, and Who is willing to reveal the necessary truths to you. Only God meets that standard. You can have absolute knowledge through Jesus Christ. It's absolute but partial knowledge. You can only know what God reveals. Without the truth that flows from Christ alone, every human thought is corrupt.

You need truth, but you can't self-generate truth. You can only make up stuff. What's the solution?

The solution is divine revelation. Jesus is real and knowable. All truth, wisdom, understanding, and knowledge are hidden in Him. He will lead you and teach you the truth you need to know. He's the secret key to knowing the truth.

Divine revelation offers true premises, but those who refuse to respond to Christ are stuck. They're stuck in a world without the possibility of knowing the truth. Without the possibility of knowing the truth, they can't think rationally. Since ungodly thinkers don't want to respond to Christ, they claim everything is relative. They claim no absolutes exist. They fall into postmodern insanity.

Jesus shows the way for all who follow Him. He reveals the meaning of life. He explains the Bible.

However, don't let anyone deceive you. Divine revelation will never conflict with Scripture. It will show you how to apply Scripture to your life. It will expose those who add their own ideas to Scripture. It

will lead you in ways that agree with Scripture, but it will never disagree with Scripture.

And, when I say divine revelation, I'm not talking about adding new books to the Bible or changing the Bible in any way. I'm talking about being led by the Holy Spirit into the righteousness of God. I'm talking about the Holy Spirit explaining the Bible to you and applying the truth of the Bible to your life in a practical way.

It's possible to know something absolutely but not completely. You know Jesus Christ if you have a relationship with Him. And yet, you don't know Him as you ought to know Him. Your relationship grows over time. You mature in Christ. You don't know Him completely. And yet, you know Christ absolutely. Your relationship with Him is absolute. It's undeniable.

Scripture tells me if I think I know a matter I don't know it as I ought to know it. If I think there's something I understand well, God needs to show me what I don't understand about it. That doesn't mean I don't know anything. I know some things. I'm certain about them. And yet, God is going to give me a better understanding of those things as I walk with Him and listen to His voice. The same goes for you.

Jesus said He is the Way, the Truth, and the Life. He's the Pathway. He's the Truth that lights the Pathway. And He's the Life that's the destination of the Pathway. You need to stay on the Pathway. When you leave the Pathway, you can either **slip** off the Pathway or **step** off the Pathway. In either case, God has a solution.

You sometimes get off the Pathway. You either slip or step off, but you do miss the way sometimes. You're in a war. Satan is working to deceive you. If you step off the Pathway, God corrects you, forgives you, and brings you back on the Pathway provided you admit you're wrong. You must confess your sins.

If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. ~ 1  
*John 1:9 Berean Study Bible*

He doesn't just promise to pardon you. He promises to cleanse you, to make you clean. He wants to change your sinful nature and

purge out your natural tendency toward unrighteousness. Before you're done, you'll look into exactly how Christ intends to transform you.

Over time, you become more mature in Christ. You're transformed into the image and likeness of Christ. Christ is fully formed in you, and the fleshly nature disappears. That's the promise. That's the certain hope. You're somewhere on that Pathway to maturity. So am I. With maturity comes discernment. Jesus is the Way, the Truth, and the Life. He's the Pathway on which you walk. He's the Truth that lights your Pathway so you can see where you're going. And He's the Life you're approaching. Since you're on this Pathway, you aren't staying in one place. You're moving forward in Christ and changing as you go. It's possible to go backward but not if you desire God and Truth. If you're sincere in following Christ, you cannot fail because your success doesn't depend on you. Christ is the Captain. That doesn't remove your free will. You still choose to yield to Him or resist Him. He won't force you.

Divine revelation is within reach for every person without exception. Whenever you hear someone reading the Bible, God is speaking to you. However, that doesn't necessarily mean you're listening or responding to God. Listening is up to you. For example, you can read the Bible and filter it through your preconceived ideas so you never hear God's voice. God speaks through Scripture. He also speaks through the methods of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture.

A word of warning! It does no good to seek Jesus Christ if you expect Him to confirm your preconceived ideas. He isn't here to cater to your fleshly thoughts and learned philosophies or theologies. He's here to shatter every error and replace it with the truth. You need to come to Him in humility and ask Him to forgive you, correct you, and fundamentally change you. You need a fundamental change to your spirit, mind, and body. You need to allow Him to transfigure your entire three-part being. You have a problem if you think your own preconceived ideas are the right preconceived ideas and better than the preconceived ideas of others. An attitude like that makes it difficult for the Holy Spirit to get through to you as you read

Scripture or hear a brother or sister who is speaking by the Holy Spirit.

God speaks through Scripture and every means of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture. He speaks through those who yield to the Holy Spirit, and you see that written here:

You know that when you were pagans, you were influenced and led astray to mute idols. Therefore I inform you that no one who is speaking by the Spirit of God says, “Jesus be cursed,” and no one can say, “Jesus is Lord,” except by the Holy Spirit. ~ *1 Corinthians 12:2-3 Berean Study Bible*

The idols were mute. They couldn’t talk. But God speaks through those who yield themselves to His Spirit. And God also speaks through the things He has created. In the first chapter of Romans, God tells you about how He reveals Himself through the things He has created.

The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness. For what may be known about God is plain to them, because **God has made it plain to them.** For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse. ~ *Romans 1:18-20 Berean Study Bible*

Other translations say **God revealed it, made it evident, showed it, or manifested it to them.** God reveals reality through the things He has created. And God also speaks other ways. However, He never contradicts Himself. For instance, we’ve already mentioned **no true divine revelation of any kind will ever contradict the Bible** since God knows all things and can’t lie. God doesn’t get confused or make mistakes. He knows the end from the beginning and doesn’t need to change His mind or change His plan.

However, you must keep in mind that God’s plan has phases. For instance, God worked differently before Christ died and rose again than He worked after Christ died on the cross. That’s because some

parts of the Old Covenant are fulfilled in Christ. God fulfilled some through the cross. God is now fulfilling some in you. For instance, the blood of animal sacrifices was a symbol that looked forward to the real sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross for your sins. God fulfilled that sacrifice in Christ. God used circumcision and all the rituals of purification as symbols. They looked forward to the real removal of the flesh and purification of your hearts in this age. God is fulfilling that purification in you. God is removing your fleshly nature. And yet, Jesus said until heaven and earth shall pass away, not even one iota nor one stroke of a letter shall pass away from the law until everything is fulfilled.

The choice before you is truth or deception. Truth is absolute by definition. Relative truth is at best just an opinion or at worst an outright lie. Reasoning based on anything less than truth is deception.

So, you know all truth and wisdom are hidden in Christ. And you know He is the secret key to knowing the truth. Now, you need some answers. How do you apply this to your life in a meaningful way? How do you discern Christ's voice from all others? How do you grow up in Christ? How do you mature so it's easier to walk in truth than to be deceived? Hang on tight. You'll explore all that in the last section of this chapter titled *God's Endgame*.

## **Cognitive Dissonance**

I confess that I suffered from cognitive dissonance as God was speaking to me about many of the truths written in this book. I grew up in a world of religion without the kind of power God shows you in Scripture. I grew up in a world of Christian Rationalism, Naturalism, and Materialism. As God peeled back the layers, each layer was difficult for me to accept. I kept asking, "Could this be true?" I didn't just balk at one thing. I balked at many things God showed me. I just had trouble believing any of it. Fortunately, God didn't unload everything on me at once. He spoon-fed me a little at a time. He was patient with my unbelief.

## ***Emotions***

I'll also confess that I've made many mistakes. I've been deceived by false teaching, and my deception hurt those around me. I was seeking the mind of God, but my own stubborn will and emotions made me susceptible to deception. Which emotions tripped me? Feeling sorry for myself. Anger. Fear. Bitterness. Worrying that I was missing out. Wanting to be important. Religious pride. Wanting to prove myself right, better, or more understanding than others. Covetousness. Envy. Feeling left out. Wanting people to like me. Those aren't the only possible emotions that could cause problems. Those were my stumbling blocks. Those were the ones that made it hard for me to know the difference between God's voice and my own voice.

## *Preconceptions*

Those emotions were inner enemies. The other inner enemies are preconceptions. I've talked about worldviews or paradigms. Worldviews and paradigms are preconceptions that seem real but aren't real. They can deceive you. However, if you seek the Holy Spirit, He will begin to weaken those preconceptions and set you free.

## *Liars*

Enemies from the outside distort your judgment. These are false teachers, lying counselors, and false prophets. They hide their lies in news media and education. They plant their seeds through the themes of movies, cartoons, and novels. They influence you through entertainment and magazines. They can be very subtle or in your face, but they have their effect. If you're spending time with any of these, you may wonder why you aren't making spiritual progress and why God's voice is hard to discern. Wonder no longer.

## *Peers*

Some of your friends and acquaintances make it harder to hear God. Peers pressure you. They're under the influence of the false teachers, lying counselors, and false prophets you've been avoiding. They work against you spiritually. Some of your most caustic

contacts stir up fear within you, and you react to that fear instead of listening to God's voice.

Do not be deceived: "Bad company corrupts good character." ~ *1 Corinthians 15:33 Berean Study Bible*

## ***Weakness***

It took me decades to accept the weakness of my mind. I had thought my mind was reliable. I did wonder about some of my friends' minds, but I didn't question my own. So, learning that my thoughts had no foundation was a shock. I couldn't believe I based so much of my thinking on vapor. I couldn't believe I had made up so much of what I thought was real. Some of my thoughts were grounded in truth, but many of them were not. Some had no underlying truth at all

I'm still learning to allow the Holy Spirit to lead me in every aspect of my life. My old habit is to just get things done. I tend to jump into analysis and planning without taking time to stand in the presence of the Almighty. So I'm working on that, and it isn't easy. Often, my own ambitions and thought-habits muffle the voice of God.

Since admitting I depend on Christ has been hard for me, I think it may be hard for some other Christians. I suspect some Christians will have trouble receiving these truths.

I can only imagine what unbelievers would think if confronted with the truth in this book. They already turned away from the Light of Christ because they knew what that Light would do. It would convict them. It would expose their self-righteousness. It would expose their sins. That Light would ask them to turn from their sins. Those sins are their meaning and purpose. Those sins are the center of their lives. They look at the call of Christ to righteousness and holiness as a form of slavery. They hear about heaven, and it sounds like hell to them. They take pride in their intellect. They take pride in their self-generated goodness and self-styled morality. They love their independence from God, His righteousness, and His love. Then, God tells them everything they value is worthless. Picture this book falling into the hands of people like that and what they would think. If they do get a copy of this book, I pray they have the patience to read the

book. I pray they ask Jesus Christ to reveal Himself to them and show them God's ways are far above ways that exclude God.

What I wrote is enough for this book. I didn't write much about the power of God and what He intends for the church, but that's something that I'm still not able to grasp. You may find God telling you His power and authority is already in your hand. If God's people could just know and understand all the power and authority He's put into their hands, then, every sickness would be healed. Then, no problem could stop them. Then, they would defeat every evil foe. Then, nothing good would be impossible for them. However, that's not the major theme of this book. You'll have to work that out with God directly. I'll focus on how you can know the truth and what that means for your life.

Nothing I'm going to tell you in this book is complicated. If anything, it's too obvious and simple. However, some of it may be new and different. This book is likely to bring up truths you had never considered. It's normal for human beings to have trouble accepting extreme changes in their thinking. People who easily change from one view of the world to another are just as easily swayed toward lies as they are toward the truth. If some of this seems a bit much for you, that's normal. I may tell you things that conflict with what you considered reality. Some truths may be too hard to accept right away. My advice is to turn to God. Ask Him about those truths that seem hard to understand. Ask God to sort them out for you and help you understand any truth. Don't rush. Give it time.

## Truth Will Set You Free



Truth is real. Truth exists. And you can know the truth. Truth is within your reach. Consider the following Scripture:

If you continue in My word, you are truly My disciples.  
Then **you will know the truth**, and the truth will set you free. ~ *John 8:31a-32 Berean Study Bible*

Truth **isn't** too high of a goal regardless of what the intellectuals tell you. There's a way you can find the truth, and that way is Jesus Christ and the revelation that flows from Him to you.

Here's a question you must answer before you can go forward. How can you take hold of what you just read in John 8:31a-32 and make it useful to you today? How can you know the truth and be set free?

## ***Set Free***

John 8:31a-32 tells you listening to the voice of Christ and acknowledging Him is the path to freedom. The truth will set you free.

Then you will know the truth and the truth will set you free.

You want to be free, but free from what?

Read on from the same place in the Bible to find the answer.

Jesus replied, "Truly, truly, I tell you, **everyone who sins is a slave to sin**. A slave is not a permanent member of the family, but a son belongs to it forever. So if the Son sets you free, you will be free indeed. ~ *John 8:34-36 Berean Study Bible*

**Everyone who sins is a slave to sin.** However, Christ **sets you free from sin**, but you must continue to listen to Him and yield to Him. You must continuously live, move, and have your being in His leading, teaching, and correcting. If you hear without responding, you aren't abiding in His leading, teaching, and correcting. However, if you respond to His voice in willing submission and obedience, you abide in His leading, teaching, and correcting. If you allow Him to say His words through you and do His works through you, He will set you free from your slavery to sin. If He sets you free, then you are free indeed.

Now, it's becoming clear.

**If you stand in the presence of Christ continually, listening to His voice, He'll teach you as His**

**student. He'll lead, teach, and correct you. Something in listening to His voice will set you free from your slavery to sin. Without this, you remain slaves.**

You can even be born again and find yourself as slaves to sin, constantly doing what you don't want to do. The apostle Paul talked about that. And yet, you can be free. When you listen to Christ's voice, it sets you free.

I'm talking about maturity. I'm not talking about being born again. When you're born again, you're born as a baby in Christ. However, God wants you to grow up. When you grow up, you experience all the promises in the Bible. Consider the works Jesus did. Consider the works the apostles and prophets did. Those were just a foretaste. God has much more for you. What are the limits?

Some people say it's impossible to leave sin behind completely. Others say if you sin it proves you weren't born again. Others have other ideas. All these opinions bring up many questions. Hopefully, God will answer all your questions before you're finished. You can see that Truth sets you free from sin. And listening to Jesus Christ is the key to Truth.

## *Continue In Christ's Utterance*

God's promise to you in John 8:31a-32 is conditional. You must continue in Christ's word—whatever that means. Let's start with Jesus' word. What is Jesus' word? Looking up the original language, the Greek word "logos" means "utterance." It's His spoken word, the statements He makes. His **word** is His **logos**, which is God's **utterance**. If you prayerfully read the first chapter of John in the Bible, you find this utterance can't be separated from Christ. In the beginning was the Word, the Logos, the Utterance, and the Logos was God. And the Logos was the Light that lights every person who comes into the world. Jesus Christ reveals Himself and speaks to every person who comes into the world. Some listen. Others flee from the Light.

If you continue in **Christ's utterance**, you are truly His disciple. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will

set you free.

What is the utterance of Christ? You need to understand that. You must continue in Christ's utterance. What is that? How can you do that? Let's find the answer to that.

Let's look at the Greek word translated as "continue." It means the following:

abide, continue, dwell, endure, be present, remain, stand, not to depart, to be held, to be kept continually, to live, and to remain as one.

You could say the word "continue" means to live, move, and have your being continually in His utterance. So you're living in Christ's utterance continually. That still seems foggy. What does that mean?

**If you continually live, move, and have your being** in Christ's utterance, you are truly His disciple. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.

It means you will be Christ's disciple if you continually live, move, and have your being in His utterance, but what is a disciple? A disciple is a student or pupil.

If you live, move, and have your being in Christ's utterance, you **are truly His student**. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.

Let's simplify that.

If you continually live, move, and have your being in Christ's utterance, **He teaches you as His student**. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.

Now, this is starting to make sense. If you are Christ's pupil or student, He is teaching you the truth. If you're following Christ, then He's leading you. He's speaking to you all the time. He's correcting you sometimes. You need to listen. You need to seek Him and enquire of Him. You need to ask Him for direction and believe He will direct you. You need to stop resisting Him and second-guessing Him. You need to submit to Him when He corrects you. You need to stop being double-minded.

## *Double Minded*

If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways. ~ *James 1:5-8 King James Version*

You receive wisdom if you ask God for it. He gives you wisdom liberally. He leads. He teaches. He corrects. It's all there for the asking. All you have to do is ask in humility without the hypocrisy of doubting. When you fear, you are doubting. When you allow the enemy to discourage you, you are doubting. When your fear leads you into anger, you are doubting.

No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. The light of the body is the eye: therefore **when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light**; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. **Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness.** If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.~ Luke 11:33-36 King James Bible

You must make a decision. You can try to straddle the fence, but it won't work. What you think is Light in you will be darkness if you're double-minded. The double-minded person will receive nothing from the Lord. No wisdom! If you don't fully trust God, you'll trust your own mind and observations. You might even trust the minds and observations of others. If you try to go both ways at once, you won't be able to receive God's wisdom. You'll lose your ability to see the difference between good and evil. You won't know reality from make-believe.

Wisdom isn't a physical substance like a bottle of water. God doesn't give you a bottle of wisdom for you to use as you see fit. Wisdom is the flow of Christ's Spirit through your being. He's like a flowing river of water. If you cut off the Source, the flow stops. If you hinder the flow, the flow dwindles. Wisdom is Christ leading you and empowering you for righteousness, but you must listen and yield. You can't fight or argue against Him without negative consequences. Double-mindedness pollutes His water.

That means when the Holy Spirit transfigures you, He's transfiguring you into a creature who flows with the love of God. When Christ is fully formed in you, you won't be an independent little christ. We'll be fully joined to Christ in unity as a body. You'll be joined to Christ the head and the body of Christ. His wisdom will flow through you. You'll be completely in submission to Him and dependent on His power flowing through you. He'll do His works through you by His might. He's your Head, and you're a part of His body. He's transfiguring you into the specific part of His body He created you to become. He's fitting you into His body.

You can be double-minded in many ways, but there's a common theme. If you depend on human intellect along with following the Holy Spirit, you are double-minded. You make a provision for the flesh. You add your own ideas to God's revelation and leading. You follow ungodly council. You might follow ungodly news, advice, and entertainment media. You might follow ungodly education. You may read ungodly magazine articles. Often, these aren't openly sinful, but they're godless. They look at life from a humanist perspective. Some have a spirituality, but they don't carry the spirit of Christ. Those are the worst. Until you develop spiritual maturity, these can draw you in and deceive you.

God warned me about these decades ago. He called them "the great false prophet." Since those days, I see they're part of a great false prophet system that seeks to filter and control every message. They pander to human cravings and lusts. They stir up envy, jealousy, fear, and anger. They know sex sells.

These are ungodly counselors. Keep in mind their goal is a godless society. If you follow ungodly counselors, you won't be able to stand

on the coming evil day. Some Christians try to split themselves between walking in the Spirit and walking in the world. They will never have spiritual stability. They won't be found faithful. Globalists are now trying to set up their godless new world order. If God allows them to have their way, it will be an evil day.

Blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked ~ *Psalm 1:1 Berean Study Bible*

*King James Version* says, "Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly." God is looking for those who will listen to His voice wholeheartedly. The double-minded will receive nothing from the Lord. If you try to straddle the fence, you'll never develop discernment to tell God's voice from your own thoughts. You won't know the difference between God's voice and the wicked ideas of ungodly people.

You can be double-minded in several ways. If you depend on your own rationalizing mind so you try to mix your own thoughts and fleshly desires with God's revelation, you will be double-minded. If you do that, you become spiritually confused because you are adding to God's utterances or filtering out some of God's utterances.

If you expose yourself to the many ungodly influencers, you will be double-minded. You could give yourself to newsrooms, classrooms, novels, movies, fact-checkers, or other methods by which ungodly minds seek to mold you to their ways of thinking. The messages of Rationalism, Secularism, Humanism, Evolutionism, Old-earthism, Scientism, Naturalism, and Materialism infuse every form of media and education in the same way the Holy Spirit infuses the Scripture. Can you hold fire in your laps without burning your clothes? If circumstances force you to listen to these influencers, you must be on your guard. And you must be more intimately close to Christ. You need to ask the Holy Spirit to protect your mind and keep you on the track of truth.

the wicked will not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the assembly of the righteous. ~ *Psalm 1:5 Berean Study Bible*

The wicked won't be able to stand when the judgement comes. You live in a serious hour. You must become single-

mind toward Christ. You must give up your allegiance to the worldly systems. You must even give up your loyalty to your own ideas. You must allow the Holy Spirit to continue to lead, teach, and correct every part of your thinking.

Therefore take up the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you will be able to stand your ground, and having done everything, to stand. ~ *Ephesians 6:13*  
*Berean Study Bible*

The Bible goes into some detail on the whole armor of God. It mentions the parts of this armor: truth, righteousness, the readiness of the gospel of peace, faith, salvation, and the word of God. Even so, it may seem hard to take hold of these parts of your armor and use them. They must become the center of your daily life.

Here's a problem. Some Christians understand deism is a false doctrine. They know it's wrong to say, "God created everything and then ran off somewhere far away." They know God is a personal God. They point out that deists say God doesn't answer prayer or perform miracles.

They know all this. And yet, they don't glorify God by acknowledging God's moment-by-moment leading and teaching in every situation. They find a comfortable place somewhere between full dependency on God and full dependency on their own abilities. They look for something lukewarm since they don't want to be hot or cold. They want to avoid extremes. They just want to be double-minded, but they don't want to apply the term "double-minded" to themselves. By the way, I'm struggling with the same tendency to lean on my own understanding. Are you?

Double-mindedness won't work with what's coming. God has a plan and pattern for avoiding double-mindedness.

## *All your Ways*

If you totally depend on Christ, He's your life. You live, move, and have your being in His utterance as He leads, teaches, and corrects you moment by moment in every situation. You listen to Him and

obey Him by His power as He gives you His free gift of righteousness. He speaks His words through you. He does His works through you. You don't do your own thing anymore. Then, you don't partially depend on Him and also depend on other sources for decision-making, understanding, wisdom, knowledge, or truth. You depend on Him wholeheartedly. You aren't double-minded. You depend on Him for everything. You stop looking to ungodly counselors for guidance. You stop depending on your fallen mind. When you hear His voice you yield to His Spirit and allow Him to say His words and do His acts through you. The love of God is shed abroad in your heart by the Holy Ghost. If you continue to do that with a sense of expectation, you'll know the truth. And the truth will set you free.

Listen, trust, and obey God by the power of the Holy Spirit. That makes sense. You can do that. You've done it. You've known when Christ showed you something was right and that you must do it. You've known when Christ showed you something was wrong and that you must not do it. You've sensed that something was wrong in a situation, and you avoided it. You've sensed the peace of God when something was in God's will. You may not have given Christ the credit, but you should have.

You need to depend on the Holy Spirit alone. Depend on the Spirit of Christ.

That does bring up some questions. For instance, should you avoid all technical instructions and rather pray God would give you a vision to show you how to program your electronic devices? God could do that, and He could lead you that way. However, the Holy Spirit is likely to give you wisdom and lead you to read the instructions if that's what's needed. You need to be in the Spirit to have the wisdom of Christ flowing through you in either case. Should you avoid researching a topic or a procedure? Not necessarily. The Holy Spirit often leads you to look up the needed information. God will guide you in the process. When you come to a problem, you're in the Spirit and seeking God's will. The Holy Spirit can guide you to look at a video that shows how to do something technical. He can also give you confidence so you know what needs to be done. Don't limit God.

Should you throw out your Bible if you depend on the Holy Spirit alone? No. The Holy Spirit will lead you to read your Bible. The Holy Spirit will interpret the meaning of the Bible for you. The Holy Spirit may guide you to look up the original meaning of a word. The Holy Spirit will warn you about false teachers and lead you to teachers and shepherds who will keep you safe from lies. He may lead you to one church body where you grow until you're ready to move to another church body. You know God's ultimate plan for the church is unity, but the body of Christ is in that interim between the promise and the full possession. The main thing is that you seek God's will and yield to His Spirit. God is practical and active in your life.

What about politics in a republic like the United States? Should you avoid voting? Should you totally detach yourself? In the past, many Christians stepped out of politics. They turned their schools over to ungodly people. They turned their lawmaking responsibilities over to ungodly people. That resulted in ungodly laws that grieve the heart of God. And they thought it wouldn't be a problem. However, it led to serious problems. Those problems are part of why the world is so crazy now.

Some say the Holy Spirit leads them to detach from the world. Some say the Holy Spirit tells them to avoid voting or even being aware of what's happening in the world. I'm not going to second-guess that. Just be sure you're listening to and following the Holy Spirit. Be sure you're not following your own will or rationalized reasoning. It's between you and God.

Each one should be fully convinced in his own mind. ~  
*Romans 14:5b Berean Study Bible*

Be sure the Holy Spirit is leading you and not the culture, a persuasive leader, or the news media. Beware of the ungodly counselors in the media and the culture. Beware of false teachers and false prophets.

Is your hope in politics? No! Your hope is in Christ. God wants you to acknowledge Him in **ALL your ways**. God wants you to listen to His voice in **ALL your ways**. **ALL your ways** include your careers, social life, politics, and every other aspect of your life.

This current order will eventually fade and fall. However, you live your life in righteousness while you're here. You stand against evil. Righteousness means being led by the Holy Spirit and only saying the words Christ says through you and only doing the acts Christ does through you. If you do that, Christ will have an impact on your culture. The battle is spiritual and must be fought in the spiritual realm.

The political realm is just one small part of your life. God has also given you the responsibility to earn a living and take care of your families. If you develop skills for your careers, you can do that in two different ways. The ungodly way is to depend on your intellects and human abilities. The godly way is to seek the face of the Lord regarding your career. When you seek God's will, that doesn't mean you don't go to work. It's not that you trust God to take care of you so you don't bother working. The Holy Spirit will lead you to develop your skills and to work hard and smart. He'll show you the best career for the part of the body of Christ God created you to be. He'll show you how to develop your skills. His wisdom will flow through you as you work.

You yourselves are our letter, inscribed on our hearts,  
known and read by everyone. ~ *2 Corinthians 3:2 Berean  
Study Bible*

He'll work through you on your job. He'll speak through you on your job. You're not paid to spread the Gospel, but when God speaks through you, you speak His Logos. You speak His Rhema. You speak the living Christ. You can do your job by the Wisdom of God. Jesus Christ is the Wisdom of God. If you're in a meeting, the words you say are alive with the Spirit even as you focus on the job at hand and the business purpose of the meeting. You speak Christ and His Wisdom. That's the Rhema of God. It causes faith in those who hear it even if you never mention the Gospel. If you're an electrician, God speaks through the work of your hands. Those who see it and receive it are hearing the Rhema of God. If you're a carpenter, God works through you. You are a living letter from God to whoever watches you work. Just remain in the flow of the Holy Spirit and His Wisdom. Listen to His voice. Learn to let Him lead. Learn to follow Him.

He'll do the same in your family. He'll lead you and give you power for righteousness. He'll do the same in all your relationships. You listen to His voice in ALL your ways. You live, move, and have your being in His utterance. Then, He teaches you as His student, and sets you free from sin. Sin has held you down. Your fleshly nature has enslaved you. Nevertheless, listening to Christ and yielding to Him will set you free. In the last section of this chapter, *God's Endgame*, I'll thoroughly explain how to experience all these blessings.

## *Spiritual Adultery*

and that ye seek not after your own heart and your own eyes, after which ye use to go a whoring: ~ *Numbers 15:39b King James Bible*

If you put anything in the place of God, you are unfaithful to God. You're serving an idol. When you follow other gods, God looks at it as unfaithfulness. Idols can be statues or demons, but the human intellect is also a deceptive idol, and many people worship the human intellect. The passage you just read from Numbers 15:39b is speaking of idolatry, which is spiritual adultery against God. God judges you as unfaithful when you seek after your own heart, mind, and ability to observe. He rightly judges you as an unfaithful wife when you do that.

### **IDOLS**

Of all the idols Christians worship, the worship of the intellect may be the hardest to abandon.

God considers His Creation as His wife. He calls you to love Him, trust Him, seek Him, and find Him. God created you to be joined to Him intimately. He desires to lead you in every thought and emotion. He wants to flow through you in love, joy, and peace. He wants to do His works of righteousness through you as you willingly yield to Him. He wants to lead you, fill you with faith, and allow faith to give you access to His grace. He wants His grace to say His words and do His works through you as you yield the members of your bodies to His righteousness. Jesus said only the words of the Father. Jesus did only the works of the Father. Every thought, word, and action came from His Father in Heaven. That's how it's supposed to be for you. That union with God is the only place of fulfillment. As you yield to His

righteousness in this way, He transforms you into the image and likeness of Christ. He purifies the Lord Jesus Christ in you. It's incremental transformation. The only place you'll find true satisfaction is as God transforms you. God created you to transform you into the image and likeness of Christ.

seek not after your own heart and your own eyes

This Scripture mentions two items of idolatry. The first is your heart, meaning your mind. The second is your powers of observation. Your mind has no capacity for sound reasoning without divine revelation for truth. And if you fish around in your mind, you add to the truth God reveals. Then, you defile the truth. It's no longer the truth. Here's another problem. You filter all your observations and experiences through the preconceived ideas in your worldview. It's difficult to understand just how effectively your worldview adjusts your perceptions of what you observe or experience to match the expectations of your worldview.

Some people talk about being objective, but they're deceiving themselves. You can't be objective. You can't get outside yourself to be objective. If you think your perceptions are pure, you commit the ontic fallacy. You need Jesus Christ and His Light guiding you in every part of your life. Only through the power of the living Christ can you overcome your inability to see reality as it is.

God reveals reality to you through your observations, and He speaks truth into your mind if you look to Him. However, when you worship human intellect, you're being unfaithful to God. Of all the idols Christians worship, the worship of the intellect may be the hardest to abandon. If you come to God for wisdom, He will give you wisdom.

## *Intellectualism*

The intellect is a god. It's a familiar idol. It gives the illusion of power and authority, but it has no legitimate power or authority. What is "intellectualism?" Merriam-Webster gives you this definition:

devotion to the exercise of [intellect](#) or [intellectual](#) pursuits

Bing search engine gives you these two definitions:

the exercise of the intellect at the expense of the emotions.

the theory that knowledge is wholly or mainly derived from pure reason; Rationalism.

Notice the Bing search engine compares intellect to emotions. Both are weak and incapable of rational thought without divine revelation. Both can react to divine revelation. Both can masquerade as the Holy Spirit. Reason can't be rational unless it's based on truth, and the human mind has no way to reason to any truth. Human emotion certainly doesn't reason to any truth. If you are a follower of Christ, have devotion to Christ and exercise your spiritual senses in the spiritual realm.

## God's Endgame



This is where you go down to the nuts and bolts of taking hold of all the promises we've discussed so far. Here, you learn what God's purpose is and how you can take part in it. You learn how God intends to set you free from sin and what you need to do about it right now.

The chapters that follow this section answer the questions you may have about what you read in this section, but this is the most important section of the book. Read this section carefully. Read it again. Study it. Apply it to your life. Be transformed. Be transfigured into the image and likeness of Christ. Walk in His power and righteousness as you never thought possible.

## Relevance

What is God's endgame? Why is knowledge of the truth so important? What is God doing through this?

I became a servant of this gospel by the gift of God's grace, given me through the working of His power. Though I am less than the least of all the saints, this grace was given me: to preach to the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ, and to illuminate for everyone the stewardship of **this mystery, which for ages past was kept hidden in God**, who created all things. His purpose was that now, **through the church**, the manifold **wisdom of God** should be **made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly realms**, according to the eternal purpose that He accomplished in Christ Jesus your Lord. ~ *Ephesians 3:7-11, Berean Study Bible*

This Scripture is about the rulers and authorities in the heavenly realms. Other translations call them principalities and powers in the heavenly places. God is going to let them know about His many-faceted wisdom. And He's going to use the church, the called-out people of God, to let these rulers and authorities know about God's wisdom. Remember what wisdom is and how it flows through you in power when you ask for it and yield wholeheartedly to it. God speaks, you listen, faith comes, faith gives access to the power of grace, and grace says the words and does the acts of God through you as He transforms you. That's wisdom flowing through you. That's Christ flowing through you.

This is a mystery. It's a secret. It's something God hasn't told us a lot about. However, God has revealed enough through Scripture that we know something about it. And we know it's big.

This is so big it's difficult to grasp the first time you hear it. It's not that it's complex. It's simple. It's just big. It's different from what some people believe. It's all in the Bible, but many people have never heard any of it. Many have heard parts of God's plan rationalized away. There's never a good time to try to rationalize away any part of the Bible. The Bible is true even when we don't understand it.

For unto you a child is born, unto you a son is given, and **the government will be upon His shoulders**. And He will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. ~ *Isaiah 9:6 Berean Study Bible*

I ask that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened, so that you may know the hope of His calling, the riches of His glorious **inheritance in the saints**, and **the surpassing greatness of His power to you who believe**. These are in accordance with **the working of His mighty strength**, which He exerted in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly realms, far above all rule and authority, power and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in the present age but also in the one to come. And **God put everything under His feet** and **made Him head** over everything for the church, which is **His body**, the **fullness of Him who fills all in all**. ~  
*Ephesians 1:18-23 Berean Study Bible*

The government is upon His shoulders. The shoulders are part of His body. God has an inheritance in the saints, the believers. Everything is under Jesus' feet. The feet are part of the body. God's surpassing power is toward His body. It's toward those who believe. His body is the fullness of Him. He fills all in all. He fills everything in everything. God's Word Translation says, "The church is Christ's body and completes him as he fills everything in every way."

Walk in the Spirit. Speak as the oracle of God. Allow Him to always speak His words through you. You may just say, "Have a nice day." It doesn't matter if God gives you the words and He speaks those words through you. If it comes from the Holy Spirit, it's the utterance of God. This is the utterance by which faith comes. Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word of God. People need to hear God's voice. They can only hear as God speaks. Faith comes as they hear. Speak only the words God gives you. Speak only the words He speaks through you.

You are our epistle written in our hearts, *known and read by all men* ~ 2 Corinthians 3:2 New King James Version

An epistle is a letter. You may be the only Bible some people ever read. If you listen to the voice of God and yield to His Spirit. He does His work through you. Those who see you are reading a letter from God. They can't unread what they've read in you as God does His good works through you. They hear God's voice. They may reject

God's voice. They may receive God's voice. They can't unsee what they've seen. They can't unhear what they've heard.

## **Where You Are**

Satan has been working through a false-prophet cabal. This cabal consists of schools, media, fact-checkers, and others. The cabal has normalized many perversions. It made many corruptions popular. In the 1800s, Satan first brought false science and false intellectualism to cast doubt on the history in the Bible. Satan then worked to weaken the church and teach the church to walk without the leading of Jesus Christ, without Wisdom and Truth. Since then, Satan has promoted sexual sin, envy, covetousness, murder, stealing, disobedience to parents, disrespect for authority, and disrespect for God. Those have been active in the fallen human nature since the fall of man in the Garden of Eden, but they are now coming to the maturity of evil.

Sexual sin has been one of Satan's goals following the pattern set by Balaam. Satan knew he could destroy God's people if he could get them to follow sexual sin and destroy the family. It started with something called "free love" in the 1960s. No love is involved. The so-called "free love" is freely using others for personal gratification with no commitment. "Free love" is sexual perversion. Then, the perversions continued in wave after wave of one perversion worse than the other. They created a great-false-prophet message-control system to brainwash the public and manipulate weak minds to promote ideas that can't work in real life. The result is a lack of fulfillment, happiness, success, and goodness. It's part of why the world is so crazy.

Sexual sin is an act against the order of the family. God established the order of the family. Satan has been working on destroying God's orders from the beginning. However, he made tremendous progress toward his goals in the 1960s and since. Now, you see the occult and Marxism rising. The false-prophet system has control of every lever of power and influence. And it's part of a larger plan to wipe Christianity off the earth. It won't succeed, but life could get rough.

On the other hand, a remnant company of saints is seeking God seriously. They're listening to His voice and responding in willing submission and obedience to His righteousness. The Light of Christ

is growing to maturity in them as the flesh loses control. It's the time of the wheat and tares. It's the time of Joel's Day.

a day of darkness and gloom, a day of clouds and blackness. Like the dawn overspreading the mountains a great and strong army appears, such as never was of old, nor will ever be in ages to come. ~ *Joel 2:2 Berean Study Bible*

Many choose the middle ground. They don't want to be hot or cold. They stand between totally depending on God and depending on intellect, emotions, and the culture. They are religious and may even be radical. Instead of following Christ, they follow doctrines, organizations, persuasive leaders, or something else other than Christ. We are fast approaching a day where it won't be possible to be lukewarm. No one will be able to stay on the fence. Everyone will have to make a decision.

Woe to those at ease in Zion and those secure on Mount Samaria, the distinguished ones of the foremost nation, to whom the house of Israel comes. ~ *Amos 6:1 Berean Study Bible*

Today, Zion refers to the church. It's possible to settle into complacency in the church and be at ease in Zion. Many know about the promises in Scripture but have no desire to partake of the power and authority Jesus purchased on Calvary. You probably wouldn't be reading this book if you were among those who are at ease in Zion.

The Lord's abiding presence, His parousia, is coming in His people. This isn't the bodily return of Christ to the earth but the conclusion of God restoring His church after the great falling away from God's patterns and ways. Saints from every denomination and division of God's people are learning to discern God's voice from all others. They're turning from their double-mindedness and their favorite sins. They're turning from idols such as entertainment, human intellect, pleasure, and possessions. They're turning from religiosity to the living Christ: Christ in you the hope of glory.

So let us know—let us press on to know the LORD. As surely as the sun rises, He will appear; He will come to us like the rain, like the spring showers that water the earth. ~ *Hosea 6:3 Berean Study Bible*

## Panorama

I'm going to lay out God's plan in a panorama quickly without much detail first. This will be an overview. Then I'm going to back it up with detail and Scripture. It's all in the Bible.

God intends to transform you, to transfigure you from one level of glory to the next, into the image and likeness of Christ. How? By grace, which is through faith. Faith comes by hearing and hearing comes by God's rhema, or utterance. As God leads you, He speaks His Rhema or Logos into you. Keep in mind that this Logos is Christ Himself. That's why Jesus is the Author and Finisher of your faith. God's faith gives you access to God's grace. God's grace does God's works through you as you yield to His gift of righteousness.

You must yield. That's your part. That's your responsibility. Your responsibility is to stop fighting against God. That's what yielding to God is. It's not fighting God. As you yield to the point of obedience by the power of the Holy Spirit, The Logos transfigures you a little bit with each new willing submission to the Logos. God is doing two things. First, He's purifying you by removing the fleshly nature. The flesh can't be reformed. It must die. Second, He's forming Christ completely within you. You are purified, and you are edified or built up in Christ. The Holy Spirit does this incrementally as you yield to Him. That's what holiness is. It's Christ formed in you and the fleshly nature purified from you.

You could condense that. God leads you. You follow. As you yield to Him in willing submission, the Holy Spirit changes you a little bit each time.

<b>Rhema &gt; Hearing &gt; Faith &gt; Grace &gt; Righteousness &gt; Holiness</b>
--

God is leading you by His Spirit. When He speaks, He speaks a vision touching all your spiritual senses. You hear Him, you feel Him, you smell Him, you taste Him, and you see Him. You aren't mature yet, so your spiritual senses aren't fully developed, but you're learning to hear His voice, see His vision, and yield in submission.

You say you're walking in the Spirit. If you're walking, you're going somewhere. You're on the Way, and this Way is Jesus Christ. He is

the Way, Truth, and Life. You could compare your moment-by-moment progress as you travel on this Way to taking a physical step on a path. A single step seems like nothing. However, each step is important since each step brings you closer to your goal of God's Kingdom.

Your walk always begins with God leading. Since Christ guides you, trains you, and corrects you moment by moment in every part of your life, you can choose to listen or you can choose to ignore Him.

How does He lead you? He speaks to you through Scripture. He also speaks to you through all the means of divine revelation God shows you through Scripture. He speaks to you directly through a still small voice. He speaks through a word of knowledge or a word of wisdom. He speaks through dreams and visions. He leads through those members He sets in offices of authority in the Church. And He leads through every member as you build each other up in love.

Therefore I inform you that no one who is speaking by the Spirit of God says, "Jesus be cursed," and no one can say, "Jesus is Lord," except by the Holy Spirit. ~ *1 Corinthians 12:2-3 Berean Study Bible*

## **Seeing the Vision**

I've gone through the basics of God's plan quickly. Now, it's time to go through it in more detail. You'll see some of the Scripture references through which God is revealing His pattern and process.

When God speaks and you listen, He also gives you a vision of reality. In each moment, God reveals Himself. It's as if you're looking at a mirror.

For anyone who hears the word but does not carry it out is like a man who looks at his face in a mirror, and after observing himself goes away and immediately forgets what he looks like. But the one who looks intently into the perfect law of freedom, and continues to do so—not being a forgetful hearer, but an effective doer—he will be blessed in what he does. ~ *James 1:23-25 Berean Study Bible*

It's like a spiritual mirror. You look into God's perfect law of liberty. Since this is a spiritual mirror, you don't see the natural. You see the spiritual. You have a fleshly nature, but you don't see this flesh in yourself. Each of your brothers and sisters has a fleshly nature, but you don't see this flesh in them. You only see Christ. As you walk, you see more clearly because of the maturity that comes with walking. You're less easily fooled by the deceitful and desperately wicked fleshly mind. You more easily recognize what comes from Christ.

So from now on we regard no one according to the flesh.  
Although we once regarded Christ in this way, we do so no longer. ~ *2 Corinthians 5:16 Berean Study Bible*

He shows you who you are in Christ, how you fit into the body of Christ, what is and isn't part of the body of Christ, and what He wants you to do right now. Your responsibility is to hear and yield your will to Him. Then, He will say His words and do His acts through you.

Now we see but a dim reflection as in a mirror; then we shall see face to face. Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known. ~ *1 Corinthians 13:12 Berean Study Bible*

It may seem as if we can hardly see or hear in the Spirit, but keep walking. As you walk, you will mature. The Holy Spirit will form Christ in you more completely. Your rebellious sinful nature will die away. Believe God that He will complete His work in you.

Beloved, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been revealed. We know that when He appears [phaneroo], we will be like Him, for we will see Him as He is. ~ *1 John 3:2 Berean Study Bible*

You are already the children of God. However, God hasn't yet unveiled the fullness of what He has in store for you. However, as He becomes visible, you're transfigured to be like Him because you see Him as He is.

The Greek word "phaneroo" means "becomes visible," and Christ is becoming visible to you and visible in you. You see Him as you

discern the body of Christ. You see what is and is not part of the body of Christ. Although some theologies put this Scripture off to the future, it's for you right now. As Christ becomes visible to you, you shall be like Him for you see Him as He is. How is He? He's a Head in heaven and a multi-membered body walking in submission to His righteousness on earth.

But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord.

~ 2 Corinthians 3:18 New King James Version

If you see it right, you see the body of Christ as God sees it. Only one Scripture identifies the veil, and the veil is a symbol of the flesh. It refers to the fleshly nature that blinds you so you can't see reality as it really is. You can't hear God's voice, not even when you're reading Scripture because of the veil of the flesh. You remove the veil from your face and look. You look as if looking into a mirror. You see the glory of the Lord in that image. And then, you're transformed. The word translated as "transformed" is the Greek word "metamorphoo," which means transfigured. It's the same word used to describe the transfiguration of Jesus on the mountain. However, your transfiguration isn't sudden. Rather, it goes from glory to glory by the Spirit of the Lord.

What's happening? What's this transfiguration? The fleshly veil is disappearing. Every stronghold of the fleshly veil is toppling. God is removing this veil like peeling back the layers of an onion. God removes a layer of lies. You feel like you're finally seeing things right, but then God starts working on the next layer of the onion. At the same time, the Holy Spirit is sowing Christ into your heart. God speaks and the Holy Spirit sows Christ into your heart.

The [physical human] body is a unit, though it is composed of many parts. And although its parts are many, they all form one [physical human] body. **So it is with Christ.** ~ 1 Corinthians 12:12 Berean Study Bible

When you read the Bible, God is speaking. I hope you're listening to Him and thanking Him. In 1 Corinthians 12:12, God says the human body is a unit composed of many parts. Then, He says, "So it

is with Christ.” He DOESN’T say, “So it is with THE BODY OF Christ.” He says “**So it is with Christ.**” Christ is the Head in heaven joined to the many-membered body here on earth.

When you discern the body of Christ, you see Christ in all the members of the body of Christ. You see gifts of the Spirit, ministries, offices, and orders. When you recognize and submit to the authority of gifts, ministries, offices, and orders, you recognize and submit to Christ. You carry the authority of the body of Christ everywhere as a member of this body. This book won’t go into detail on the ways the nine gifts of the Spirit, ministries, offices, orders, and government of the Church work. Suffice it to say God has a pattern for His Church. It’s all in the Bible. We can’t deny those parts of Scripture that tell us about the pattern. The pattern of Scripture is different from what most churches follow. Change is hard, but changes will come. God has already revealed much, and the church has much that it must walk into.

You need a personal relationship with Jesus Christ in which He leads, teaches, and corrects you moment by moment in every situation. Then, He speaks to you through the Bible and all the various methods of divine revelation mentioned in the Bible. He speaks visions of hope to you personally in your innermost being. Often, these visions come as momentary flashes of light, and you say, “Wow! I never saw that before.”

God is restoring the church to its original order and pattern. However, you can’t see the Biblical pattern and order in the church today. It’s not there yet. Some theologians even try to explain away the differences by making up an extra-Biblical “apostolic age.” When God shows you something isn’t according to the pattern of Scripture, you shouldn’t argue with Him. You need to acknowledge His voice and seek His face about what you must do.

You need to live, move, and have your being in the utterances of Christ as He leads you. If you do that, you’ll eventually know where to fellowship. You’ll know where God has set authority on earth. God is restoring the church. The church is now immature, but God is moving. The church is in disarray, but God will bring order. Organized religion is most often human-organized rather than God-

ordained. Much of the church operates in non-Biblical forms and rituals. The church is dragging along artifacts of apostasies and abominations that crept into the church during the first several centuries of the church's existence. You will find it easier to spot these disorders in other churches. You'll have trouble seeing them in your own church. You get used to disorder, and disorder gives the illusion of order if you're accustomed to it.

Many refer to themselves as "called and ordained." Some of them, God didn't call or ordain. God didn't send them. They sent themselves. And yet, God did call some, and they are walking in that calling.

God doesn't overwhelm you. As God leads, teaches, and corrects you, He'll continually give you little flashes of a vision of this holy body of Christ. He'll show you what it will be when He finishes it. He'll form it without spot or wrinkle or any such thing. It's an unfolding revelation. As you discern this body and submit to the authority of this body, the Holy Spirit will continue to transfigure you from glory to glory.

## **Jesus is your Wisdom**

God made Jesus Christ your wisdom, which is righteousness, holiness, and redemption.

It is because of Him that you are in Christ Jesus, who has become for us wisdom from God: our righteousness, holiness, and redemption. ~ *1 Corinthians 1:30 Berean Study Bible*

You're going to look into righteousness, holiness, and redemption since the original Greek indicates that wisdom includes these three.

## ***Righteousness***

Righteousness is Jesus Christ manifesting Himself in you, and righteousness springs forth by grace through faith. It's a gift. That's the process we've been talking about where God speaks, you hear, faith comes and gives access to grace, and grace does God's works through you.

You aren't saved by righteousness, but you are saved to righteousness. You aren't saved from righteousness, but you are saved from sin. Righteousness is a gift, and it's part of your salvation.

**the gift of righteousness** reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ! ~ *Romans 5:7b Berean Study Bible*

For as the earth brings forth its growth, and as a garden enables seed to spring up, so the **Lord GOD will cause righteousness and praise to spring up** before all the nations. ~ *Isaiah 61:11 Berean Study Bible*

Someone may say, "Aren't you just supposed to love one another, and doesn't that make righteousness something that belongs to the Law of Moses?" A question like that shows a lack of understanding. Love is righteousness. God is love. God's Law is love. God working through you is righteousness. God working through you is the love of God flowing through you.

You can't produce righteousness. It comes from God. You can't produce love. It's a fruit of the Holy Spirit. It comes from the Holy Spirit. It comes by listening to His voice and receiving His faith. His faith gives you access to His grace. His grace does the works of love and says the words of love through you. You yield yourself to His love. You play an important part. You yield. You stop fighting God. God does everything else.

**The commandments "Do not commit adultery," "Do not murder," "Do not steal," "Do not covet," and any other commandments, are summed up in this one decree: "Love your neighbor as yourself."** ~ *Romans 13:9 Berean Study Bible*

For you, brothers, were called to freedom; but do not use your freedom as an opportunity for the flesh. Rather, serve one another in love. **The entire law is fulfilled in a single decree: "Love your neighbor as yourself."** ~ *Galatians 5:13-14 Berean Study Bible*

And we have come to know and believe the love that God has for us. **God is love**; whoever abides in love abides in God, and God in him. In this way, love has been perfected among us, so that we may have confidence on the day of

judgment; for in this world we are just like Him. ~ *1 John 4:16-17 Berean Study Bible*

If you listen to God in all the ways He speaks to you, God's faith comes. Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word (rhema) of God.

Consequently, faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word (rhema or utterance) of Christ. ~ *Romans 10:17 Berean Study Bible*

The Greek term, "rhema," translated "word," means "utterance." Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the utterance of God. Jesus Christ is the Logos, the Utterance of God. That's why Jesus Christ is the Author and Finisher of your faith. When God speaks, He's speaking the essence of Christ into you if you will receive it from Him. He's planting a seed. That means when God leads, if you have ears to hear, faith comes. This faith isn't an internal human effort of making yourself believe, that is, make-believe. It's not pretending. Faith is substance: reality as opposed to concept. And it's evidence: absolutely certain proof.

Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. ~ *Hebrews 11:1 King James Version*

The Greek word translated as "substance" is "hupóstasis." Hupóstasis means the foundation or base, the assurance or support, the subject-matter, the sediment, the real nature, a mental realizing, a substructure, the essence. Faith is solid. Faith is reality as opposed to concept. It's the reality of things you hope for.

Hope isn't "I hope so." Hope is the God-given vision of what God is going to do. Hope is absolute and dependable. If God says it, it's real. God can't lie.

What about the word "evidence?" The Greek word is "elegchos." Strong's Exhaustive Concordance defines "elegchos" as "proof, conviction:—evidence, reproof." The 1650 Strong's defines it like this: "a proof, that by which a thing is proved or tested." Faith is the absolutely certain proof of things you can't see with the limitations of

your natural eyes. Faith is absolute because it comes from your absolute God.

You don't manufacture this faith. You can't. Jesus Christ begins and completes your faith.

Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter [completer] of our faith ~ *Hebrews 12:2a Berean Study Bible*

Faith gives you access into God's grace.

Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through your Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have **gained access, by faith, into this grace** in which we stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God. ~ *Romans 5:1-2 Berean Study Bible*

This grace is through faith.

For it is **by grace** you have been saved **through faith**, and this not from yourselves; it is the gift of God ~ *Ephesians 2:8 Berean Study Bible*

And God's grace does God's works of righteousness through you.

But by the grace of God I am what I am, and His grace to me was not in vain. No, I worked harder than all of them—**yet not I, but the grace of God** that was with me. ~ *1 Corinthians 15:10 Berean Study Bible*

When you try to do your own works, you become self-righteous and frustrate the grace of God.

I do not set aside the grace of God. For if righteousness comes through the law, Christ died for nothing. ~ *Galatians 2:21 Berean Study Bible*

But when God works through you, you do His righteousness and fulfill the entire law. More correctly, He does His righteousness through you as you yield to His righteousness, and His righteousness, working through you, fulfills the entire law. You can only do righteousness by grace, and you can only access grace through faith.

## Rhema > Hearing > Faith > Grace > Righteousness

Notice the sequence. Righteousness is by grace, which is through faith, which comes by hearing,

God speaks His rhema, you hear, faith comes and gives you access to God's grace, and grace does God's righteousness through you. God's rhema is what God says. It's God's utterance. The only way you can walk in righteousness is by grace. The only way you can access grace is through faith. You can walk in God's righteousness, but you need to listen to God as He leads you. Unless God leads you to it by His utterance, His rhema, it's not righteousness. However, God's rhema isn't enough. God must lead, and then you must yield and allow God to do His works through you. You must allow Him to say His words through you. God gives you this righteousness as a gift. However, you must receive it. God doesn't force His gifts on you. You can fight against God's righteousness.

Whatever isn't of faith is sin. In other words, if God didn't lead you to it and do it through you, then it's sin. Your own way is sin. Your own effort is sin. The narrow way is extremely narrow.

and everything that is not from faith is sin. ~ *Romans 14:23b Berean Study Bible*

The righteousness grace does through you is God's gift of righteousness.

For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who **receive** an abundance of **grace** and of **the gift of righteousness** reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ! ~ *Romans 5:17 Berean Study Bible*

This righteousness isn't theoretical. It does works of righteousness. It's real and practical as God thinks His thoughts, speaks His words, and does His acts through you. You are to speak only His words. You are to do only His acts. You weren't created to be independent of God. God created you to be joined to Him in intimate communion.

Little children, let no one deceive you: The one who practices righteousness is righteous, just as Christ is

righteous. ~ *Romans 6:13 Berean Study Bible*

When you read the words, “let no one deceive you,” those words are there because someone is going to try to deceive you. There’s no such thing as righteousness without doing righteousness. *King James Version* says, “**he that doeth righteousness is righteous.**”

Of course, you do this righteousness by yielding to the Holy Spirit and allowing God to do His righteousness through you. Your part is to yield the members of your bodies to His righteousness.

Do not present the parts of your body to sin as instruments of wickedness, but present yourself to God as those who have been brought from death to life; and **present the parts of your body to Him as instruments of righteousness.** ~ *Romans 6:13 Berean Study Bible*

Neither **yield** ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but **yield** yourself unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. . ~ *Romans 6:13 King James Version*

Your part is to yield. You need to stop fighting against God. God won’t force His love on anyone. If you resist, God retreats from you. If you yield, He pours His love out on you and through you. He created you for righteousness.

For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful man, as an offering for sin. He thus condemned sin in the flesh, **so that the righteous standard of the law might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.** ~ *Romans 8:3-4 Berean Study Bible*

*Holiness or Sanctification*

Righteousness leads to holiness. Holiness is sanctification. Holiness is purification. Righteousness is God working through you. Holiness is Christ formed in you and the fleshly impurity removed. Righteousness is what God does through you. Holiness is what you are becoming in Christ. Righteousness is thought, word, and deed in the moment. Holiness is a permanent transfiguration. Holiness is the anointing of being or becoming.

I am speaking in human terms because of the weakness of your flesh. Just as you used to offer the parts of your body in slavery to impurity and to escalating wickedness, so now offer them in slavery to **righteousness leading to holiness**. ~ *Romans 6:19 Berean Study Bible*

Holiness is purification, but what is God purifying? He's purifying Christ in you.

But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: ~ *1 Peter 3:15 King James Version*

Two things are happening in this sanctification or purification of the Lord God in your innermost being. He builds up Christ in you, and He removes part of your fleshly nature. Christ in you is your holiness. Christ is the only holiness you'll ever have. Holiness is Christ formed in you and the fleshly nature removed. Sometimes, you become discouraged. You want this transformation to happen more quickly. You're disgusted with your unholiness. However, God **is** completing His work. Be patient with God's process. You just need to keep listening to His voice and yielding yourself to His Spirit.

That Logos God spoke into you, the Logos that resulted in faith, gave you access to God's grace. That grace did God's works through you. That Logos is the seed God puts within your hearts. He's edifying you, which means He's building you up in Christ. God must fully form Christ in you. The Holy Spirit is taking care of that but only if you are willingly receiving it to the point of obedience. God won't force Himself on anyone. Sometimes, your obedience must take place in painful circumstances.

My children, of whom I travail again until that Christ shall have been formed in you, ~ *Galatians 4:19 Berean Study Bible*

This is the seed the sower is sowing. You may have thought God sowed the seed once and that's it. You may have thought you gave your heart to Jesus at one time, and that's it, you're done, end of story. However, you aren't born-again to stay a baby. Growing up in Christ is not learning the theology of a denomination. Growing up in Christ is having Christ fully formed in you and dying to the sinful nature.

# SPIRITUAL MATURITY

**Christ fully formed in us**

**Fleshly nature gone**

This Word that God speaks is the Living Word. Consider that God created the entire universe in all its complexity and glory by speaking the Word. The first chapter of John tells you the Word was in the beginning and God didn't create anything without the Word. Of course, that Word is the Logos, the Son of God, Jesus Christ. Psalm 51:10 says, "Create in me a clean heart, oh Lord." The word "create" is translated from the word "ktizō." This is the same word that's used in the New Testament to discuss God creating the world. When God speaks, His Word has creative power. Consider what a responsibility you have to speak only God's words by God's power. Consider the impact if you do.

## *Redemption, Set Free*

Besides having Christ formed in you, you also need the Holy Spirit to purify you. When you obey the Holy Spirit and deny your fleshly nature, your fleshly nature dies. You're purified and set free. Redemption refers to setting a slave free. God is setting you free from your carnal, fleshly nature. We have been slaves to the fleshly nature, but the fleshly nature is dying. Your fleshly nature is dying. Many Christians try to improve the fleshly nature, but that's an exercise in futility. It's equivalent to trying to bring light to a room by sweeping out the darkness. Darkness doesn't sweep. You must turn on the Light. Light does away with darkness since darkness is the absence of Light. Your flesh must die. Your fleshly nature is going away little by little as the Light shines. You're redeemed as a slave set free. The Holy Spirit builds up Christ in you as your flesh dies. Your flesh dies

by the Holy Spirit being active and alive in you. Your flesh dies by the Holy Spirit doing the works of God through you.

Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation, but it is **not to the flesh, to live according to it**. For if you live according to the flesh, you will die; but **if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live**. For all who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God. ~ *Romans 8:3-4 Berean Study Bible*

## *The Flowing Stream*

Wisdom is a flowing stream. The problem of the double mind becomes obvious when a Christian talks about something like the history in Genesis. When they talk about the Creation or the Flood, they might say something like the following:

Atheists and deists observe the same things we as Bible-believers observe. Here's the difference. Atheists and deists hold worldviews different from ours. Their worldviews deny the validity and truth of Scripture. Our worldviews affirm the validity and truth of Scripture. We presuppose the Bible is God's word. We presuppose the Bible is without error.

Christ wants a relationship with you. He doesn't want you to try to reprogram your fleshly mind so you don't have to stand in Christ's presence anymore. Christ doesn't want you depending on your own mind no matter how accurate your worldview might be. You can't reform your fleshly nature anyway. The flesh must die. Christ wants to live in you and do His works through you. He wants a connection continually forever. He wants a meaningful relationship with you. Here's how He talks about it:

For My people have committed two evils: They have forsaken Me, the **fountain of living water**, and they have dug their own **cisterns**—broken cisterns that cannot hold water. ~ *Jeremiah 2:13 Berean Study Bible*

You can't store the Spirit of God, but you try to store it in your cisterns. Your cisterns are creeds, religious forms, or rituals. Your cisterns are theologies, credentials, buildings, or organizations. Your

cisterns are worldviews, learned precepts, or preconceived ideas. You must let Him flow through you continually. Your God is a flowing stream. He will be a Fountain springing up within you if you yield to Him. He'll provide your credentials in Christ. He'll correct what you've learned or established as your worldview or theology. He'll show you what came from Him and what came from some other source. He'll direct every aspect of His church in gifts, ministries, operations, offices, and orders. Through Scripture, He's already given you clues as to how He'll do this.

Creeds and confessions can act as a firewall against heresy for those who don't know Jesus Christ. The Bible does the same. Those who don't listen to the voice of Christ don't have Christ as a foundation. They may sing "On Christ the solid rock I stand. All other ground is sinking sand." However, they stand on the creeds and confessions rather than Christ. They know about God. They don't know God. That being said, the Holy Spirit can speak to you through the creeds and confessions just as He speaks through the Bible. You need to know Him. Knowing about Him isn't enough. You need to cut off the influence of the ungodly.

You stand in His presence. You enter into His presence with thanksgiving and into His courts with praise. The fear, or deep respect, of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom. There, in His presence, you listen to His voice. You become sensitive to His leading. When His faith comes, you yield yourself to His faith and allow Him to say His words and do His works through you as you yield the members of your bodies to His righteousness.

Christ doesn't want you to base your thinking on assumptions, presuppositions, or your worldview. He wants you to know Him. He wants to speak to you through His creation, the ministries in each member, the Bible, spiritual gifts, and any other means of divine revelation He chooses to use. He wants you to acknowledge Him in all your ways. He tells you the Bible is His word, His utterance, without error. He explains the meaning of the Bible and His creation to you. He confirms the reality of His being. You don't need assumptions.

If anyone speaks, let him speak as the **oracles of God**. If anyone ministers, let him do it as with **the ability which God supplies**, that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom belong the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen. ~ *1 Peter 4:11 New King James Version*

Assumptions and worldviews can never move in the power of the Holy Spirit to do the works of God. You may say the right words, but they have no transforming power without the flow of the living Christ in them. You may do all the right things, but they will be dead works unless Christ does them through you. When you speak as the oracles of God, you speak the living Christ. When you speak by the Holy Spirit and someone listens to you, they receive the Logos and Rhema of God. That's how faith comes to them. The same is true of the work you do. Walk in the power and authority of God. It's yours. Christ paid for it. You have no way to do anything of spiritual value in your own power.

## *Christ Will Return*

Sometimes, you have gotten your eyes on the return of Christ, but you forget that He must first appear in His saints. God called you to shine like the Son.

Most Christians don't realize the word "coming" in the Bible is "parousia" in the original Greek. Parousia is a compound word. It's made out of two words. The first part means "alongside." The other means "goods or property." Christ is coming alongside His property. The word "parousia" doesn't mean "return." It means "abiding presence."

When Christ returns, He will return for a bride without any spot or wrinkle.

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave Himself up for her to sanctify her, cleansing her by the washing with water [water is a type of the Holy Spirit] through the **word [utterance]**, and to present her to Himself as a glorious church, **without stain or**

**wrinkle or any such blemish**, but holy and blameless.

*~ Ephesians 5:25-27 Berean Study Bible*

He will return for a completely pure and unified body of Christ that walks in His orders by His leading and power.

Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before, **whom heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things**, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said to the fathers, ‘The Lord your God will raise up for you a Prophet like me [like Moses] from your brethren. **Him you shall hear in all things, whatever He says to you.** ~ Acts 3:19-22 New King James Version

Moses was referring to Christ when he said, “Him you shall hear in all things, whatever He says to you.” And “heaven must receive Jesus until the restoration of all things.”

## **In Practice**

You read 1 Corinthians 1:30 and found that Jesus Christ is your wisdom. You found out wisdom consists of righteousness, holiness, and redemption. Now, we’ve just seen how righteousness works. We’ve seen how it leads to holiness, and how you’re set free, or redeemed, from sin, death, and the power of the devil.

God leads, and you yield to His leading. As He leads and you yield, He transfigures you and produces holiness in you. Each time you yield to God it’s like one step on your journey. Each moment, God has a leading for your life, and you either listen and obey, or you resist Him.

## ***Making Progress***

How does this work out in your life? Here are a few examples.

You’re working on a typical day on a typical job. You continue with a sense of thankfulness toward God, glorifying Him, and praying for

wisdom in your work. As you work, each part of what you're doing surges in Light, glory, and wisdom flowing from the Throne of God, and you acknowledge and thank Him with joy in everything you're doing.

On Sunday, in the church meeting, you keep thinking about something that happened to you during the week. The Holy Spirit is telling you to enter into the song, but your mind is too busy to listen to the Holy Spirit. Minutes pass before you focus on that still small voice. You stop paying attention to your out-of-control mind. You yield to the Holy Spirit and sing the song with the anointing of God on you.

You're driving when someone starts driving aggressively and shows obvious signs of anger. Your flesh reacts instinctively. You reflect the anger. Then, the Holy Spirit calms your mind and spirit. You listen to the Holy Spirit and yield yourself to the flow of love, joy, and peace He gives you.

You have to make a major decision about your business. You pray about it. You discuss it with your spouse. You finally meet with your church leadership and talk it over. No one person has the answer, but you sense that the Holy Spirit is working in the meeting and wisdom comes forward. You get your answer.

A presbytery, which is a group of elders who are called to a specific purpose of imparting gifts and ministries, comes to your area. The Holy Spirit leads the elders to lay hands on you according to the pattern of Scripture. And they prophesy your gifts and your ministry to you. From that day on, you see God fulfilling those prophecies in your life.

It's a busy day. You decide not to take time to read the Bible with your family. You can't get peace with your decision. It bothers you. You explain your situation to God. He tells you to pick up your Bible call everyone together now. You listen and obey.

You might have the gift of a word of knowledge. You're in a small group chatting in normal conversation when you say something that comes from the mouth of God. You didn't know one member of this group had been arguing with the other members. Even though you

didn't know about the disagreement, you answered the matter and refuted the contentious person. It was a word of wisdom from God. God just used you to settle the matter and bring unity.

You have a terrible argument with someone. You feel the anger still surging through your body. Then, you recognize the soft, peaceful inner voice of the Holy Spirit. "Ask for forgiveness." You fight that idea. You feel justified for every word you said. The Holy Spirit persists. Finally, you yield yourself to the Holy Spirit. You ask for forgiveness. To your surprise, the person you were fighting apologizes to you, and you are on good terms again. The peace of God flows through you and lets you know you're in God's will.

You might have the gift of discernment of spirits. You're at a large event when you smell a foul odor. Then a woman comes in the door about 100 yards away, and you know the odor is coming from her. This is a woman you've never seen before. She doesn't look evil, but you sense an evil spirit. The woman walks straight up to you and hands you a card. She then turns and walks out through the door she entered. Her card says she's a fortune-teller.

You might have the gifts of healing, and you find your quiet prayers bring healing results to others. God directs you. He tells you what to pray and who to pray for. You obey, and people are healed.

These are a few examples I've seen, but the Spirit has endless ways of moving through His people in righteousness. However, your walk in the Spirit doesn't happen automatically. You must yield to the Spirit in willing submission and obedience. You must cooperate with the Holy Spirit. You're required to stir up the gift of the Spirit through seeking God, prayer, and Scripture-reading.

You and I are walking far below our calling. Jesus said you would do greater works than He did. You may have had trouble believing Him. He's still speaking to you about these greater works. They will come with your maturity in Christ. You begin with simple obedience and walk from glory to glory and from faith to faith. You will fulfill the fullness of your calling as you come to know Jesus Christ more fully and yield to His Spirit.

Warning! You can understand this as a theory and still fail to overcome.

Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. ~  
*James 2:17 King James Version*

You must yield to the point of obedience. The Holy Spirit won't force this maturity on you, but He matures you as you yield to the Holy Spirit in obedience.

You may say, "I'll just yield to the Holy Spirit. I don't need to yield to any other authority." However, the Holy Spirit doesn't lead that way. If you truly obey God, then you'll recognize and obey the authority He sets. How can you obey God Whom you haven't seen if you won't obey the visible authority set by God? You must yield your spirit, mind, and body since His love expresses itself in obedience and respect. God sets authority. Just be certain God has shown you that the authority is authentic and set by God. Satan will bring many false authorities for every genuine authority. God will show you the difference between false authority and true authority.

Obey your leaders and submit to them, for they watch over your souls as those who must give an account. To this end, allow them to lead with joy and not with grief, for that would be of no advantage to you. ~ *Hebrews 13:17 Berean Study Bible*

That's one of many verses on this subject, and God also makes it clear that civil authorities are also His.

Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which is from God. The authorities that exist have been appointed by God. ~ *Romans 13:1 Berean Study Bible*

I used the analogy of taking a step to show the incremental nature of your walk with God. This proverbial step can be a step backward if you fail to listen to God's direction. You can go backward. If so, you see a vision out of your own heart. Then, you deceive yourself to think your vision is true. That opens the door for you to do works of the flesh. These works might even look good, but they're just self-righteousness. Like the false prophets, you run when God has not

sent you. You then become like a man who looked at his natural face in a mirror and immediately forgot what he saw. He forgot who he was in Christ and how he fits into the body of Christ. He didn't discern the body of Christ, and he didn't allow God to do His righteousness through him.

But whoever looks intently into the perfect law that gives freedom, and continues in it—not forgetting what they have heard, but doing it—they will be blessed in what they do. ~ *James 1:23 New International Version*

I may wish the church was more mature than it is. I would like to see the gifts of the Spirit operating at a higher level. I hear people who call themselves prophets foretelling the future. How do they react if they say something is going to happen and it doesn't happen? Is there humility? Is there repentance? Do they confess their faults?

You may ask in your heart, “How can we recognize a message that the LORD has not spoken?” When a prophet speaks in the name of the LORD and the message does not come to pass or come true, that is a message the LORD has not spoken. The prophet has spoken presumptuously. Do not be afraid of him. ~ Deuteronomy 18:21 & 22  
Berean Study Bible

If a false prophecy deceives you, don't be discouraged. The Holy Spirit must train your senses. If you heard a false prophecy or misheard God, let the Holy Spirit teach you. In this Scripture from Deuteronomy, the Holy Spirit is speaking to you. Listen. If a prophet makes a false prediction, what does the prophet do? Do they rationalize it away? Do they ignore it? Do the followers of the prophet forget it?

Learn. Repent. Seek God. Look for that deeper relationship where no deception lives.

## ***Discernment and Maturity***

You could become discouraged. You may think God is leading a certain way, but it doesn't work out. You may think you have a promise from God, but you don't receive it. Then, you blame God or

you condemn yourself. You may give up and think God isn't leading you at all. Think about the term "leading of the Holy Spirit." When you become discouraged you may think that term is just a euphemism. You may think it has no real meaning. Consider the songs you sing. Are they filled with meaningless poetic phrases?

He walks with me and He talks with me.

He leadeth me. He leadeth me.

Speak, O Lord, as you come to You

Open up your ears to hear Lead you in Your truth

Word of God speak

Don't give up. If you fail, get up and keep walking. You know God is faithful to complete the good work He started in you. God is leading you to maturity. Maturity isn't instant. You need humility.

If you listen to Christ and walk according to the vision He gives you, you take a step in the right direction. You stay on the way, directed by Christ. The Holy Spirit builds the spiritual man (Christ) and demolishes the carnal man. You're more mature in Christ, better able to tell the difference between good (God) and evil (the fallen human mind).

But solid food is for the mature, who by constant use have trained their senses to distinguish good from evil. ~  
*Hebrews 5:14 Berean Study Bible*

## **The Unity and Fulfillment**

God will restore the entire creation. He'll do that at the end of the ages of the ages. That's His final endgame. However, He also has an intermediate endgame for this present age. God's purpose is to conform you to the image of His Son. Conforming to the image of Christ is closely related to two other events. Those events are His appearing and abiding presence in fullness. The eighth chapter of Romans gives you wonderful insight into God's plan.

The creation waits in eager expectation for the **revelation of the sons of God**. For the creation was

subjected to futility, not by its own will, but because of the One who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be set free from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God. We know that the whole creation has been groaning together in the pains of childbirth until the present time. Not only that, but we ourselves, who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait eagerly for our adoption as sons, the **redemption of our bodies**. ~ *Romans 8:19-23 Berean Study Bible*

“Revelation” is “apokalypsin” in Greek. It’s the removal of the veil. What is this veil? We’ve already defined it through Scripture. The veil is the flesh. The “revelation of the sons of God” is removing the flesh. It’s removing the fleshly nature. The “adoption as sons” is the “redemption of our bodies.” God is going to redeem your body. It looks like you’ll get a new spiritual body.

Now we know that if the earthly **tent [physical body]** we live in is dismantled, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands. For in this tent we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, because when we are clothed, we will not be found naked. **So while we are in this tent, we groan under our burdens, because we do not wish to be unclothed but clothed, so that our mortality may be swallowed up by life.** And God has prepared us for this very purpose and has given us the Spirit as a pledge of what is to come. ~ *2 Corinthians 5:1-5 Berean Study Bible*

If you love God and yield to Him, God orchestrates the entire universe to fulfill His good purpose to conform you into the image of Christ. God works all things together for that good purpose.

And we know that **God works all things together for the good of those who love Him**, who are called according to **His purpose**. For those God foreknew, He also predestined to be **conformed to the image of His Son**, so that He would be the firstborn among many brothers. ~ *Romans 8:28-29 Berean Study Bible*

Sometimes, people quote Romans 8:28 as “all things work together for good.” Some people give you more context. They say God works all things together for good for those who love Him. Others give you even more context. They say it’s for those who are called according to God’s purpose. However, you must get the whole context. You can’t leave anything out. His purpose is that you will be **conformed to the image of His Son**. God works everything to transfigure you into the image and likeness of Christ. The fleshly nature must go. You must have Christ fully formed within. Each of you must become the ministry God ordained you to be. Christ in you is your ministry. Your ministry is Christ in you. God will form us into one body in unity. Each member must be in complete submission to the Head of the body. All the members must unite and submit to each other. And God has a plan for that.

God has a plan, and He has a pattern and process for executing His plan. Jesus prayed that we would all be one. That’s part of God’s plan for the church. Because the church has become divided, many have given up all hope of unity, but God has not given up hope. You see Satan’s plan in ecumenism, but that false unity doesn’t make God’s real unity any less real. God knows exactly how He’s going to bring His church to maturity and unity. Human efforts at unification are fruitless, but God has a way.

Then said Jesus said . . . All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but **the sheep did not hear them**. . . . I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine. . . . And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and **they shall hear my voice**; and there shall be **one fold, and one shepherd**. . . . But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. **My sheep hear my voice**, and I know them, and **they follow me** ~ *John 10:7-27*  
*King James Version*

This passage of Scripture gives the secret to the unity of the Church. “Them also I must bring and **they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd**.” Precious few verses of Scripture tell you how God will answer the prayer of Jesus that you will **all be one**.

Another Scripture in Ephesians 4:11-13 tells you this:

And it was He who gave some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists, and some to be pastors and teachers, to equip the saints for works of ministry and to build up the body of Christ, **until we all reach unity** in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God, as we mature to the full measure of the stature of Christ. ~  
*Ephesians 4:11-13 Berean Study Bible*

This passage of Scripture explains what God is doing and how He is doing it. It shows you what you need to complete the work. What is that work? Read carefully and understand God's process. Saints, believers, you and me, are being equipped so we can minister or serve effectively to build up the body of Christ. As the body of Christ builds itself up in love, you see it reaching unity in the faith and knowledge of the Son of God. Then, the body of Christ matures. *King James Version* says it matures to **a perfect (that is, a completely mature) man**. It doesn't say mature men and women, but the unity is so complete the body of Christ functions as a single person. And finally, it matures. It comes to the measure of the fullness of the stature of Christ. Every member of the body of Christ will have Christ fully formed within. Each will be in his or her place of ministry in total submission to the Head, Christ in Heaven. Each one will be joined to Christ. The body of Christ will move in perfect unity. This body will fulfill the Biblical order for the body of Christ. God is, even now, restoring His church from faith to faith and from glory to glory.

This is God's endgame. This is the vision of the hope of what God is doing. This is your destiny and only place of satisfaction, peace, and fulfillment. And you and I can take part in it if we're willing.

# How Logic Works



Let's summarize what you already know. We've established that logic isn't sound unless the premise is true and the form is valid. And we know the human mind has no way to reason to a true premise. We know divine revelation is the only way to have a true premise.

## Nuts and Bolts



Here are the elements:

- true premises
- valid form
- true conclusions that don't add new information to the premises

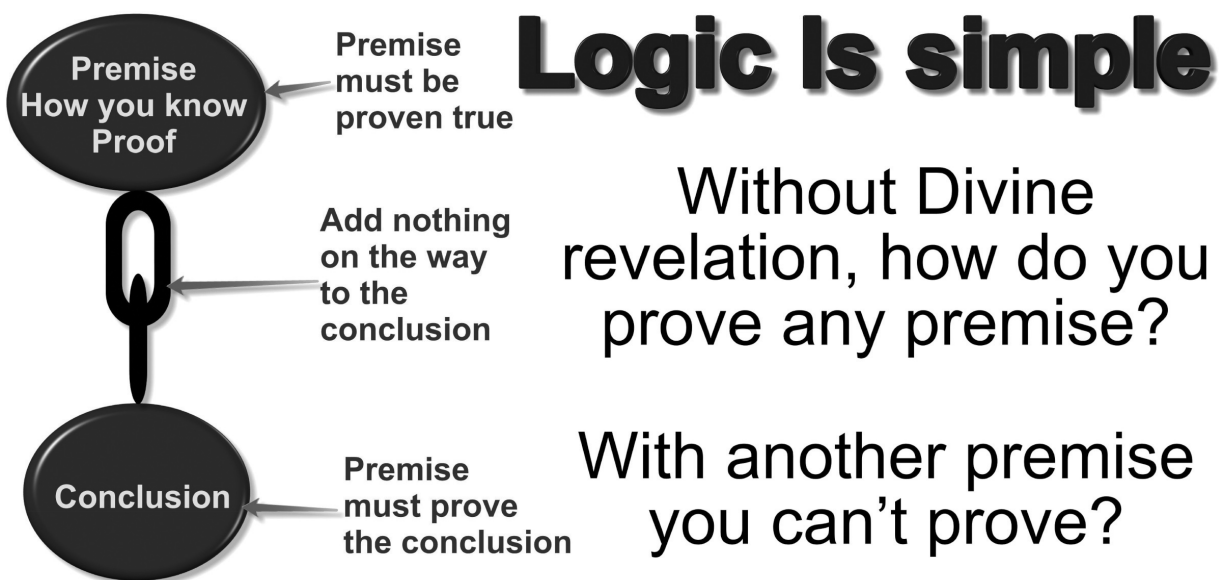
The premise is the foundation. The premise is how you know the conclusion is true. The foundation must be true. Truth is absolute by definition. Strongly-held beliefs are not truth. Groupthink isn't the same thing as truth. Peer pressure isn't truth. Truth is reality. Truth is absolute.

The premise needs to support the conclusion. The term "support" **can** mean to verify the truth of something. However, people can also define it in other ways. Some people define the word "support" in ways that don't do what logic is all about. You can also define the word "verify" in various ways. And some of those definitions are stronger than others. Logic requires the premises must prove the conclusion is true. Proof indicates absolute knowledge. It's not like the courts where you must prove your case beyond a reasonable

shadow of a doubt. That would be qualified proof instead of proof. Logic requires proof without any qualifications or softening of the word. Otherwise, the logic isn't sound.

Logic has the goal of establishing the truth. Logic has the purpose of helping you tell the difference between reality and make-believe. To do that, the premises need to remove all doubt. Premises must prove the conclusion beyond doubt. It's more than that, though. Even if you don't have any doubt, that doesn't mean you've found the truth. You can become convinced of ideas that aren't true. You can be without any doubt and be wrong. If you don't base your thinking on truth, you could feel sure of something that's not true. Truth is absolute by nature. Without the faith that comes by hearing the voice of God, you cannot possibly know any truth.

Here's a graphic that shows the basic idea:



The premise is how you know the conclusion is true. Here's an example:

**Premise:** If Jesus speaks to me, then Jesus is real.  
(proved by revelation)

**Premise:** Jesus speaks to me. (proved by revelation)

**Conclusion:** Therefore, I know Jesus is real.

Notice the premises are true. Notice the conclusion contains no information that wasn't in the premises. That's what's meant by the

conclusion following from the premises. When the form of logic is valid, the conclusion restates the premises. It can't go beyond the premises. No new information was added secretly between the premises and the conclusion. Notice the premises prove the conclusion.

You can't prove a conclusion based on a premise you haven't proved any more than you can prove a conclusion based on a lie. You must prove the premise. You must know the premise is true. You may not have a way to prove the premise to anyone else, but you have to know it's true. You need proof even if no one else can see the proof. You need to know. Here's an example of true premises that prove the conclusion:

**Premise:** Jesus Christ speaks to me. He speaks through Scripture and the many means of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture. When He speaks, He imparts His faith to me. That faith is absolutely certain proof Jesus Christ exists. (all proved by revelation)

**Conclusion:** Therefore, Jesus Christ exists.

Some people say this doesn't help them. They don't believe what you tell them about your experiences with Christ. You can't prove anything to anyone through logic. You may be able to convince them, but convincing isn't the same as proving. And a skeptical person can always remain unconvinced. Only the Holy Spirit can speak truth into their hearts. The Holy Spirit may speak that truth through you, the Bible, or some other means. However, a skeptic or scoffer can easily resist the Holy Spirit. All who love truth listen to Jesus. People must see the proof themselves. And they can.

**Premise:** By divine revelation, I know Jesus Christ speaks to anyone who seeks Him in sincerity and with persistence. All who seek Him find Him. He speaks through Scripture and the many means of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture. When He speaks, He will impart His faith to whoever seeks Him. That faith is evidence, meaning absolutely certain proof. (proved by revelation)

**Conclusion:** Therefore, if you seek Him in sincerity and with persistence, He will reveal Himself to you and speak

to you, and you will know He exists.

I can't tell you how many skeptics I've invited to know Jesus Christ only to have them reject the offer. They turned away from the Light of Christ. Every person can know Jesus Christ exists. Some people don't believe Jesus exists. It's a choice those people made. One other point of truth. Jesus Christ also reveals Himself to every person, and that clinches it. They know. They reject. They are willingly ignorant. Perhaps, some will turn to Christ someday. Maybe they'll realize they have no path to truth in themselves. The Holy Spirit continues to proclaim Christ to them as you yield to the power of the Holy Spirit.

However, you must go beyond just knowing Jesus Christ exists. You need to learn how you can be conformed to His image and likeness. You need to know how you can overcome the fleshly nature and have Christ fully formed within. Then, you must yield to the Holy Spirit so God can fulfill this promise in you. You must submit to the point where you only say those words that He is saying through you and only do those acts that He is doing through you.

## **Deductive, Inductive, Abductive**



### **Deductive Reasoning**

Deduction reasons from known true facts to a true conclusion. It must start with truth to be sound. The starting point is called the premise. Deduction can have more than one premise. The true premise proves a conclusion. The conclusion is also true because the premises are true and the form is valid. Valid form is covered in the reference section of this book. You must have proved the truth. In other words, you need true premises or deductive reasoning is unsound. Sound deductive reasoning leads to knowledge of the truth.

#### **Example:**

God reveals He knows all things, He can't lie, and He provides all knowledge and discernment. He says everyone who seeks Him will find Him through Jesus

Christ and His Spirit will then teach all who seek Him and yield to His Spirit.

I'm learning to seek God and yield myself to His Spirit.

Therefore, God's Spirit is teaching me and God is providing knowledge and discernment to the extent I'm able to yield to Him.

What God reveals is true. What God reveals provides a true premise. Therefore, you have a true premise when you acknowledge what God reveals to you. The three-volume set of books: *Real Faith & Reason* go into great depth to explain why this is. *Real Faith & Reason* also refutes the many false arguments against divine revelation and for Rationalism. If you seek God's mind, He will guide your deductive reasoning.

## **Inductive Reasoning**

Induction reasons from multiple known facts to a tentative conclusion. Inductive reasoning must also start with truth or the reasoning is unsound. Inductive reasoning never leads to true conclusions. It can lead to convincing guesses. It can be useful for decision-making when you don't know what to do. Science uses inductive reasoning. Many types of inductive reasoning exist. I'll quote from *Real Faith & Reason Volume One* to give an overview of types of inductive reasoning. You'll see some forms of inductive reasoning are more reliable than others:

### ***Inductive Generalization:***

All the people I have known prefer Fords. Therefore, all people prefer Fords.

### ***Statistical Syllogism:***

Our historical records show it rains the following day twenty percent of the time whenever we have the current atmospheric conditions. Therefore, we have a 20% chance of rain tomorrow.

### ***Simple Induction:***

Twenty-seven years ago, I was a Christian, and I prayed that God would answer my question about why He decided to send the Genesis Flood. Since I didn't receive an answer I couldn't argue against, I conclude God doesn't exist.

### *Argument from Analogy:*

Rats are similar in some ways to humans. We tested our drug on rats and haven't seen any adverse effects. Therefore, it's less likely that our drug will have adverse effects on humans.

### *Causal Inference:*

Some people believe natural selection caused some evolutionary changes. They believe other factors caused other evolutionary changes. Therefore, molecules-to-humanity evolution happened.

### *Argument from Prediction:*

If it's raining outside, I would expect the sidewalk to be wet.

The sidewalk is wet.

Therefore, it's raining outside.

### *Bayesian Inference*

You are testing which of two hypotheses are more probable. You compare the two timelines, the Biblical timeline and the evolutionistic timeline. **Assume** the Biblical timeline probability is near zero. **Assume** the evolutionistic timeline probability is near 100%. Feed those two probabilities into your Bayesian formula. Calculate. You infer the evolutionistic timeline is much more probable than the Biblical timeline.

### *Inductive Inference*

Over decades of use, hydroxychloroquine has proven safe if taken in the recommended doses. Several doctors successfully treated hundreds of CCP-virus-infected

patients using Hydroxychloroquine, Azithromycin, and zinc. Nations that used Hydroxychloroquine as part of their treatment for the CCP virus have had much less death than nations that haven't used hydroxychloroquine. Therefore, you can infer that hydroxychloroquine may be an effective treatment for CCP virus. Therefore, you can infer that tens of thousands may have died unnecessarily because of the actions of the deep state, the news media, and the tech giants in suppressing the use of hydroxychloroquine.

Reading through these examples, it's clear that inductive reasoning isn't a way to reason to true premises. You can't rely on inductive reasoning to find facts. If you have true premises and valid form, the conclusion could still be false. That doesn't mean inductive reasoning isn't valuable. God provided inductive reasoning. It can help you to survive until you achieve maturity in Christ. If you yield to the Holy Spirit, He will guide your inductive reasoning.

## **Abductive Reasoning**

Abductive reasoning is intuitive. It doesn't follow a form. Some have tried to give it a form, but not in a rational way. Intuition can be a gut feeling. It can be a hunch. It can be an inner voice or a vision. It can come in a dream or an inspired statement.

Intuition can come from one of three sources and can be a mix of two or three of these sources.

- God (divine revelation)
- the deceitful and desperately wicked human mind
- demonic principalities and powers who deceive you and desire your ultimate destruction.

God can speak to you through intuition. When He speaks to you through intuition, He provides the discernment to know it is God Who is speaking.

Abductive reasoning is the only form of reasoning that can tell you the Bible is God's word without error. The Holy Spirit must reveal that fact to you, and then you know.

Many have used inductive or deductive reasoning to say the Bible is God's Word without error. They've done a good job and brought out many good points. However, those who don't want the Bible to be God's Word begin from a different worldview and different presuppositions. Because they start from a different worldview and different presuppositions, they look at the same physical evidence and conclude the Bible isn't God's Word. They conclude the Bible is full of errors. Worldviews, presuppositions, and assumptions are different ways of having made-up stuff. As long as made-up stuff is allowed to be part of reasoning, no one can know anything for certain. What God says to you is certain.

What about recognizing who to follow? Who does God authorize to equip believers for works of ministry? How will you know who to trust to build up the body of Christ until you reach unity in the faith and knowledge of the Son of God? Who did God send? Which ones sent themselves? Only the Holy Spirit can answer these questions. You need to know where you are called and who God is telling you to follow. Only abductive reasoning, the revelation that comes from the Holy Spirit, can provide the answers you need.

## *How to Enter His Presence*

How do you enter the presence of God to hear His voice?

Enter into his gates with thanksgiving, and into his courts with praise: be thankful unto him, and bless his name. ~  
*Psalm 100:4 King James Bible*

The fear [respect and awe] of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom ~ *Proverbs 9:10a King James Bible*

Entering God's presence starts with thankfulness, praise, and respect. Another key is to spend time in His presence. If you don't seek Him, you won't find Him. If you neglect your time with Him, you'll drift away from that intimate relationship. Take time to pray and stand in the presence of Jesus Christ. If you're too busy to spend time in His presence, you're too busy.

Speak to one another with psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your hearts to the Lord, always giving thanks to God the Father for everything in

the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. ~ *Ephesians 5:19-20*  
*Berean Study Bible*

Let the word [utterance] of Christ richly dwell within you as you teach and admonish one another with all wisdom [Christ is our Wisdom], and as you sing psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs with gratitude in your hearts to God. And whatever you do, in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through Him. ~ *Colossians 3:16-17 Berean Study Bible*

Notice the word “let.” You allow Christ’s utterance to dwell richly within you. Then, you’ll have something to help your brother and sister since Christ’s wisdom will flow through you. Don’t neglect singing known songs and new spiritual songs that will never be sung again. And, whatever you’re doing, let Christ guide you. Do your work with joy and the wisdom of Christ. That will bring humility and respect for Christ.

Devote yourself to the public reading of Scripture, to exhortation, and to teaching. Do not neglect the gift that is in you, which was given you through the prophecy spoken over you at the laying on of the hands of the elders. Be diligent in these matters and absorbed in them, so that your progress will be evident to all. ~ *1 Timothy 4:13b-15*  
*Berean Study Bible*

Here you have some other keys. One is reading Scripture. Paul mentioned reading Scripture publically, but you can also read it privately. Don’t neglect Scripture reading. Note how spiritual gifts are imparted. Scripture reading can also help stir up the gift. Be diligent in these matters and absorbed in them. *King James Bible* says, “Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them.”

## ***Can You Be Deceived?***

You can be deceived if you are double-minded. If you allow your rationalizing mind to get into the act, you’ll be deceived. If you want to trust Jesus but also trust the advice of the scholars, you will be deceived. “The double-minded person will receive nothing from the Lord.”

And yet, we are somewhat double-minded, aren't we? We're learning to depend on Jesus. As the old song goes, "Learning to lean, Learning to lean, I'm learning to lean on Jesus." I'm learning. You're learning. You're doing more than just learning. You're maturing. You're having your "senses exercised by reason of use." In your immature state, you sometimes get it wrong.

But solid food belongs to those who are of full age, that is, those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. ~ *Hebrews 5:14 New King James Version*

Satan tells you that you need to play it safe by depending on your own fallen, deceitful, and desperately wicked human mind. Satan might even supply a rationalization.

God gave you a mind because he wants you to use it. ~ Satan

You know the problem. The human mind has no path to truth other than Jesus Christ and the truth that flows from Him. Of course you use your mind, but you need Jesus to supply the truth or you can't think rationally. If you depend on your fallen mind, there's not just a chance you'll be deceived. You WILL be deceived. If you depend on your fallen mind, you can't think rationally. You won't be able to avoid being deceived. Not only that but you'll never develop your spiritual senses. You'll never become mature in Christ.

Some people needlessly fear they'll be deceived by their own minds or by an evil spirit if they seek God wholeheartedly without being double-minded. Let the Holy Spirit put that fear to rest with the following Scriptures:

For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened. If a son asks for bread from any father among you, will he give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will he give him a serpent instead of a fish? Or if he asks for an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him!" ~ *Luke 11:10-13 New King James Version*

Or what man is there among you who, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will he give him a serpent? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask Him! ~ *Matthew 7:9-11 New King James Version*

Notice the symbolism. Bread typifies, or symbolizes, the body of Christ. The stone typifies the hardened heart of humanity. The serpent typifies Satan or an evil spirit. The fish typifies Christ.

Satan or your own mind can deceive you but only if you are double-minded. If you can't decide between depending on God and depending on your previously learned philosophies, theologies, and whatever else you depend on, you'll have no discernment. If you can't decide between depending on God and depending on ungodly experts, you're double-minded, and you'll receive nothing from the Lord. However, if you ask God for wisdom, nothing doubting, not hedging your bets, then He will give you wisdom. The flow of the anointing of the Holy Spirit will be rich and full of confidence and truth.

Walk into this territory of depending on Christ with a certain amount of caution. Don't claim to be more mature in Christ than you actually are. And yet, as you walk, you know you go from one level of glory to a greater level of glory. If you make a mistake while sincerely following Christ, He will put you back on the Path provided that you admit your error. Humility is vital. Continue seeking Christ, and you can't lose.

## ***Warnings***

We can't over-emphasize the danger of following our desires. When you allow your desires to fill your mind and your life, you won't be able to discern the voice of God. God doesn't cater to your fleshly nature. The fleshly nature must die.

Satan works through his servants. Satan's servants constantly try to stir your fleshly nature. Satan knows how addictive sexual sin is. He knows the lure of the occult. Satan knows alcohol and drugs destroy. He also knows how to make sin appear spiritual and good.

He knows if he can get you to mix his ways with God's ways, you'll lose the ability to tell the difference. Once he blurs your vision, he knows you aren't going forward with God. Once he gets his chains on you, he knows you'll have trouble getting free. Sin takes you farther than you wanted to go. It makes you stay longer than you wanted to stay. It's progressive and habit-forming.

Jesus saves. He saves you from sin. He saves you to righteousness.

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers ~ *2 Timothy 4:3 New King James Version*

God gives you many warnings in Scripture. False prophets, false teachers, and false pastors will come. False prophets, false teachers, and false pastors will tell you what you want to hear, which makes them far more convincing. Here are some examples of warnings from Scripture:

Beware of **false prophets**, who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are ravenous wolves. ~ *Matthew 7:15 English Standard Version*

For false christs and false prophets will arise and perform great signs and wonders, so as to lead astray, **if possible**, even the elect. ~ *Matthew 24:24 English Standard Version*

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will be **false teachers** among you, who will secretly bring in **destructive heresies**, even denying the Master who bought them, bringing upon themselves swift destruction. ~ *2 Peter 2:1 English Standard Version*

Different kinds of false teachers try to deceive you. Some of them ignore the Bible. Others directly deny the Bible. Some of them accept much of the Bible but claim certain parts of Scripture are out of date or don't apply for some other reason. And then, some quote the Bible liberally but interpret the Bible by the power of their fallen, deceitful, and desperately wicked human minds. The false teachers who twist the Scripture are the most deceptive. They use abductive, inductive, and deductive logic. However, they don't have true premises. These

false teachers usually believe their own lies. Many of them have great credentials and excellent speaking skills. They may even claim to have prayed and sought the face of the Lord. They may say the Lord showed them the destructive heresies they teach. God will expose them to you and show you the way if you sincerely seek the mind of the Lord.

Beloved, **do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits** to see whether they are from God. For many false prophets have gone out into the world. ~ *1 John 4:1 Berean Study Bible*

How do you test the spirits?

**The natural man does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God.** For they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because **they are spiritually discerned.** ~ *1 Corinthians 2:14 Berean Study Bible*

Do you see the futility of trying to discern truth by the natural, fleshly human mind? No credential will give anyone authority to discern spiritual matters. Truth is always a spiritual matter. Jesus is the Truth. Deceptions are spiritual matters but a different spirit. It's necessary to discern the spirit of everything you hear. God requires it. You must discern by the Spirit of God. You must listen to His voice. If you're double-minded, you'll fall. If you try on your own, you'll fall. If you're sincere and single-minded toward God, He'll make sure you become mature and have discernment.

# Extreme Limits



We have a hard time grasping just how weak the human mind is. It's difficult for us to fathom the fact the human mind is incapable of rational thought without divine revelation. That's why you need this chapter to explain the depth of the problem of the true premise. You'll look into the deceitfulness and weakness of the human heart.

## The Three Types of Reasoning

So you have deductive, inductive, and abductive reasoning that often work together. They provide a way to survive and a way to truth. Abductive reasoning is the source of truth if you seek Jesus Christ. Abductive reasoning in the form of divine revelation is the only way to truth. It's the only way to have true premises. You need true premises for both inductive and deductive reasoning. Without true premises, no reasoning is sound. Even with true premises, inductive reasoning can be unreliable. Inductive reasoning can often make you feel certain when you should realize you're adding to God's words or subtracting from God's words. And yet, science is said to use inductive reasoning. Science really uses abductive, inductive, and deductive reasoning. Deductive reasoning that flows from direct revelation leads to truth and certainty. If deductive reasoning is sound, it begins with true premises and doesn't add to or take away from those premises. You can only get true premises by divine revelation. You need to know Jesus Christ personally. You must listen to the Holy Spirit and honor Him. God wants you to acknowledge Him in all your ways. No matter what form of reasoning you use, God will guide your thinking. You only need to ask and trust Him.

# Why It's Important



A few decades ago, God showed me that my thinking had no foundation. I was building my thoughts on a foundation of hot air. That's when I began to realize reason needs a solid foundation.

When I was bouncing along with no foundation for my thinking, my faith was fragile. I would be going along fine with confidence in God and the Bible. Then, someone would make a claim against God or the Bible. They would challenge my belief. At that point, I would rush around in a panic until I found an answer. You've probably heard many of the same attacks and challenges I ran into, so I won't give any examples here. Fortunately, there are people with websites that give answers to the many questions and challenges. It would be a shame if faith had to be so fragile that it's only solid until the next question or challenge comes alone?

The only solid foundation for reason is a revelation from God, but I didn't know that back then. And, even after I learned that divine revelation was the only firm foundation for thinking, I didn't realize the full impact of that reality for many years. God started to unfold the way reason works. He brought me face to face with one part of the puzzle at a time. Sometimes, I would be in a class related to my work when God showed me a truth. Sometimes it was a still small inner voice of the Holy Spirit teaching. Sometimes, God would show me another part through a simple meme on social media that came as a testimony from another Christian. At times, God spoke to me through His creation. And I had more trouble accepting some truths God showed me while I had less trouble with other truths.

I found out logic is pretty simple. The books and scholars have a way of making logic complex, and most of them have the same problem I had. They have the problem God had been showing me. They don't have a foundation for their thinking just like I didn't have a foundation for my thinking. Without a foundation, reason is a puff of smoke. Logic evaporates. Poof!

The scholars ran off to discuss proper form and fallacies without any foundation for their thinking. They lectured about syllogisms and logic. They had students memorize logical forms and fallacies. What they taught was good to learn. However, it was meaningless and deceptive without truth. The world isn't crazy because people failed to memorize fallacies. The world isn't crazy because people haven't memorized all the valid logical forms. At the root of every fallacy is an **absence of truth**. At the root of every untruth is missing revelation from Christ. **The world lacks hearing the voice of Christ. Christ is the Source of all wisdom. He is your Wisdom.** The further a society moves away from the Source of all wisdom, the less wisdom the people will have.

Most people have firmly-held opinions. They hold their opinions so firmly they treat their opinions as facts. They treat their opinions as if it were reality itself. They consider their opinions to be firm foundations for thinking. They almost always have nothing to back up those opinions except for manipulative tactics. Oh, they have all kinds of opinions, but they can't back up any of those opinions with rock-solid truth. They have clever sayings. They have emotional statements and stories. They think everyone agrees with them or ought to agree with them. They imply everyone agrees with them, at least all the intelligent, honest, or good people. These people say, "Look around you. Everyone believes this just as I do." Even if a statement like that were true, it's not a reason to believe. It's an appeal-to-popularity fallacy. It's just a form of manipulation.

As I watched people and listened, I saw much more than the appeal-to-popularity fallacy. Some people used threats, emotional appeals, appeals to consequences, or other deceitful techniques. I could go on listing all the fallacies I saw, but I put those fallacies in another book called *Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies*. You can get that book free at <http://RealReality.org/downloads>.

I spent years in doubt before I knew about the foundation for reason. I had a gnawing fear that one day someone would give me some information that would make God impossible. Maybe some scientific discovery would prove Jesus Christ never lived or that He isn't God. I thought that, perhaps, it might be possible for some

really intelligent person to disprove the existence of God. I had no clue. I was ignorant and in a precarious position.

I studied apologetics. When I say, “I studied,” I don’t mean I studied for a week or a year. I mean I kept studying for decades. I studied science, particularly origins science and the philosophy of science. I studied the logical arguments. I studied the answers to the questions of the skeptics. None of that gave me rock-solid confidence. The best I could say was the evidence for God was very strong given what I knew. However, I wasn’t concerned about what I knew. I worried about what I might **NOT** have known. What if someone showed me new information that proved the non-existence of God? Every time I thought I was home free, another skeptic or atheist would come along with a new claim or loaded question.

All my fear went away when God showed me that Jesus Christ proves His existence by revealing Himself. I knew Jesus reveals Himself. I had experienced His leading all my life. I just never thought it through. God had to show me.

The Son reveals the Father, and the Father reveals the Son to you. The Father and Son send the Holy Spirit to lead, teach, and correct you moment by moment. The Father, Son, and Holy Ghost testify to the truth of the Scripture. God tells you the Scripture says what it says and doesn’t say what it doesn’t say. Even now, God keeps showing me where my own mind added to or filtered out Scripture. He’ll do the same for you. God keeps bringing Scripture to life. Jesus Christ is absolute and real. You can know Him. He reveals truth. That’s how you know. Divine revelation!

An old hymn goes like this:

On Christ the solid rock I stand.  
All other ground is sinking sand.

All is a big word. **ALL** other ground is sinking sand. You might like to stand on something else other than Christ. Could you stand on your objective observations? If you tried, you would commit the ontic fallacy. The ontic fallacy is believing you can observe and experience objectively. You can’t. You can’t get outside of yourself to observe objectively. Maybe you could stand on science, but even real science is based on assumptions, observations, and preconceived ideas.

Scientists aren't perfectly pure. Science often becomes the victim of politics and the religion of godlessness. That kind of science is storytelling. Storytelling isn't a reliable path to the truth. Then, how about my ability to reason? Can I stand on that? The trouble is the human mind can't reason to the truth.

On Christ the solid Rock I stand. All other ground is sinking sand. **ALL** other ground is sinking sand. You need to know how to come to the place where you stand on Christ alone so you don't depend on everything else that lets you down just when you need it the most. That's what we covered in the section titled *God's Endgame*. You know this. It's possible to know all this and miss the mark. You must keep yourself in step with the Holy Spirit.

## How Do They Survive?



If those who don't have truth are doomed to a life without rational thought, how do they survive? Why are so many ungodly people rich or successful? How does that happen? Let's look into that.

## The Logos is the Light

The true Light who **gives light to every man** was coming into the world. ~ *John 1:9 Berean Study Bible*

The true Light is the Logos. He is the utterance of God. And He gives light to every person. You might wonder if God would shed His Light on those who are evil. You might think God only blesses the just.

He causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. ~ *Matthew 5:45b Berean Study Bible*

However, God blesses both evil and good people. He blesses the righteous and the unrighteous. If God didn't do this, they wouldn't last a minute.

The God who made the world and everything in it is the Lord of heaven and earth and does not live in temples made by human hands. Nor is He served by human hands, as if He needed anything, because **He Himself gives everyone life and breath and everything else.** ~ *Acts 17:24-25 Berean Study Bible*

God gives them life, breath, **and EVERYTHING ELSE.** What is “everything else?” It includes material needs and non-material needs. It includes truth.

Wait! I said ungodly thinkers don’t have truth. So, did I lie to you? NO.

God does give them truth. They even know the difference between good and evil by God’s revelation. And they know God exists by God’s revelation. God says He reveals everything to them. He shows them everything humans can know about God and the Godhead. God gives them what they need to survive. Why would God bother? Let’s go back to Acts 17 for the answer.

God intended that they would seek Him and perhaps reach out for Him and find Him, though He is not far from each one of us. ~ *Acts 17:27 Berean Study Bible*

God gives them truth to give them a chance to seek Him and find Him. God wants fellowship with them. God is love. As love, God must give them every opportunity. He loves them.

When they don’t acknowledge God and thank Him for the amazing gift of truth, the ungodly thinkers lose the blessing of this truth. They don’t acknowledge God as the Source of the truth, so they file away the truth and put it in with all the nonsense that flows from their deceitful and desperately wicked human minds. Lies and foolishness come out of their wicked and deceitful minds. Wisdom and truth come from God. They mix truth and wisdom with lies and foolishness and make no difference between them. They attribute God’s wisdom to their own minds and erase all differences between truth and error. As a result, they can’t tell the difference between reality and their imaginations. Sometimes, they act based on righteousness and wisdom. At other times, they act based on wickedness and

foolishness. They see no difference. They had the truth, but it did them no good.

Worse yet, if they persist, God turns them over to their own minds completely. At that point, they become like brute beasts.

## **The Brute Beast**

But these, like natural brute beasts made to be caught and destroyed, speak evil of the things they do not understand, and will utterly perish in their own corruption, and will receive the wages of unrighteousness, as those who count it pleasure to carouse in the daytime. They are spots and blemishes, carousing in their own deceptions while they feast with you, having eyes full of adultery and that cannot cease from sin, enticing unstable souls. They have a heart trained in covetous practices, and are accursed children. ~  
*2 Peter 2:12-14 New King James Version*

These are people who operate like brute beasts in that they depend on their own failed reasoning and their natural senses to survive. In the same way animals learn what works and doesn't work, these people can experiment and learn what works. However, the truth escapes them. They may teach physics or geography at the university. They may run a cash register in a gas station. However, they don't have access to the truth. They operate based on pragmatism.

But these rail at whatsoever things they know not: and what they understand naturally, like the creatures without reason, in these things are they destroyed. ~ *Jude 1:10 American Standard Version*

Other versions use the word "instinct." It seems God has given humanity some basic instincts just like animals have instincts. Without the Holy Spirit and the truth that flows from God, they can't understand spiritual things. They can't understand the truth about material things. However, there are things they understand naturally. They can find out what works and doesn't work. For instance, they can do science. They can function in a career. They can grumble, complain, do what they desire, boast, flatter, and gain advantage. They are skilled in doing evil.

These are grumblers, complainers, walking according to their own lusts; and they mouth great swelling words, flattering people to gain advantage. But you, beloved, remember the words which were spoken before by the apostles of your Lord Jesus Christ: how they told you that there would be mockers in the last time who would walk according to their own ungodly lusts. These are **sensual** persons, who cause divisions, not having the Spirit. ~  
*Jude 1:16-19 New King James Version*

These are sensual persons. They depend on their senses to guide them rather than the Holy Spirit. Every one of these verses is referring to people inside the church. These are Christians. These verses also apply to unbelievers. However, God is talking about those inside the church who are lacking the Holy Spirit.

Even without the Light of Christ, the brute-beast mind can process thought in amazing ways. The brute-beast has no access to truth without Christ. Without Christ, anything that conflicts with your current preconceived ideas feels like a lie. It feels crazy. Even the truth feels crazy. For instance, when you hear a claim, you immediately compare the claim to your worldview, your inner fake-reality. That fake reality contains all your memories of perceptions of experiences and observations. These aren't your memories of experiences and observations. They are memories of your perceptions. Perceptions aren't reliable. You can't avoid having a bias that works as a lens as you go through any experience or observe anything. No one is objective. Some of your perceptions are more accurate than others.

You compare any new perception to the memories of previous perceptions in your worldview. Your mind makes these comparisons without trying. And your mind works at lightning speed. Most often, you aren't even aware of these comparisons. You filter out what doesn't fit in your worldview. That means you filter out parts of reality. Sometimes, you make decisions based on the emotions that come out of this inner processing. You don't even know why you're choosing one answer over another. Sometimes, you think through a structured decision-making process. However, you're still comparing opinions to reality unless Christ reveals the answer to you.

# **The Prince of Power**

Anyone who continues to ignore God will continue to walk toward the prince of power of the air, Satan. Satan can offer them his leading, teaching, and correcting. Satan is a liar and the father of all lies. He can grant them success for a while, but he will control their minds.

Following Satan doesn't always happen by means like Ouija boards, tarot cards, psychics, or astrology. Many gateways exist. Every route other than Jesus Christ will eventually lead to Satan and his demonic host. If you don't direct your mind toward Christ, your mind will drift toward Satan. Demons can be extremely subtle as they try to influence you. Sometimes, demons are out in the open and obvious. Some methods of demonic influence can seem scientific or fun. Satan can cloak himself in light. Demons can seem good and spiritual. They may even say they have a message from Christ. At other times, demons quietly make suggestions into your mind. You might say, "Where did that thought come from?" It's not your fault if a bird lands on your head, but don't let it make a nest.

If you sincerely want the truth, God will expose these demonic beings. He'll show you that they're bringing spirituality without Christ.

## **Relativism and Post-Modernism**



Growing up, I never thought much about logic, but I did wonder how you can know the truth. I noticed that people on both sides of arguments could make their cases and sound convincing. Some were more convincing than others, but I tried to understand why. Often, it wasn't obvious who, if anyone, was right. The one who put on the best show (the best persuader) was the one who seemed right, but putting on the best show doesn't prove anything. As I observed, I realized how dangerous persuasive people can be when they're wrong.

I grew up repeating clichés like “everything is relative.” It was second nature for me to say, “There are no absolutes.” I would say, “The one thing you can know for certain is that you can’t know anything for certain.” I felt very wise, but I didn’t realize how foolish I was. My statements were self-refuting. I looked at the idea of logic as a boring subject that wasn’t relevant to my life. I assumed my thoughts were logical and reasonable, but I had never studied logic. My beliefs seemed to make sense to me. I thought they must be logical. And yet, I had no idea how logic works. I didn’t know I had to base logic on truth and I could only get truth through Christ.

You live in a naturalistic society. This naturalistic society thinks it’s too bold to talk about absolute truth. After all, the majority of people believe no one can know anything absolutely. They say everything is relative and no one can be certain about anything. Even many Christians believe you can’t know any truth absolutely. They claim to be certain no one can be certain about anything. It’s a philosophy called “relativism” or “skepticism.” Skeptics say you can’t discern between truth and error. They claim to know absolutely that no one can know anything absolutely. Does it do any good to know the truth if you can’t know for certain the truth is the truth?

If an idea or philosophy conflicts with itself, then it’s called “self-refuting.” To refute is to prove something false or wrong. Skepticism and relativism refute themselves. They prove themselves false. Skepticism and relativism are self-refuting. They are philosophies that demonstrate they aren’t true. The same arguments the skeptics and relativists use to support their claims also prove their claims false. Here’s why skeptical and relativistic thinking is irrational. If **“no one can know anything absolutely,”** then **no one can know “no one can know anything absolutely.”** If you **“can’t know some things for certain,”** then you **can’t know for certain** you **“can’t know some things for certain.”** You might have to think about that for a while to understand it. Self-refuting claims tend to confuse most of us. Relativism and skepticism don’t work in the real world since they always refute themselves.

Of course, some thinkers speak only for themselves. They don’t presume to speak for all humanity. They may just assert they don’t know any method by which anyone can have certainty. And it may be

they don't know any method. How sad it would be for them to go through life not knowing anything! That's why they need to read this book. They need to know how they can know the important things in life with absolute certainty.

It's now clear that sound reasoning is impossible without truth. Being rational is all about finding the truth. And yet, many people say truth is too high a goal. They say something like this:

Just surviving is the best you can hope for.

Life can never have real meaning.

Instead of meaning and truth, some people say you should just live for sensual pleasure. That's called hedonism. It's just one of many philosophies people invent trying to deal with not having any truth or meaning. Hedonism is an empty philosophy. None of the other godless philosophies work either. You need the truth. You need meaning. No philosophy will give you the truth. You **can't** get to the truth through any philosophy. You **can** get to the truth, but not through any philosophy. Philosophy isn't the way to truth. Philosophy is a way to deception. Without truth, there's no hope of sanity. Truth is a Person.

Why do some people say you can't know the meaning of life? And why do they say you can't know absolute truth? It's because the human mind has no way to reason to true premises on its own. They don't consider God. They eliminate God because they don't want God and His righteousness. Ungodly thinkers can try to find meaning or truth, but all they do is deceive themselves. Every time they try to reason to a conclusion, the conclusion isn't conclusive. Every logical argument they make requires further proof. No logic is sound unless the logic begins with truth. And truth only comes by divine revelation. The human mind can't self-generate truth. Instead, the human mind self-generates **made-up stuff**. Some people accurately call this naturally-generated product of the human mind **hot air** or **lies**. Call it what you will, the human mind can't self-generate the truth. It generates something else.

And yet, you can find the truth. However, any truth must come from God. You must stand in His presence and listen to His voice.

You must yield to His Spirit to the point of righteousness. You must allow God's love to flow through you.

The human mind can't reason to anything true unless it starts with truth. Agrippa, Münchausen, and many other philosophers have tried to get around the problem of the inability of the human mind to reason to anything true. They've all come up empty. Modern scholars have struggled with this problem without finding a rational solution to it. Most scholars ignore the problem or try to project it onto others without dealing with their own lack of substance and inability to think rationally. Here's what they ignore. Before they can rationally claim anything they need a true basis for that claim. They need truth but avoid the obvious answer to their problem. They could have the path to truth. There's a solution, but they don't want that solution. Sadly, they can't handle the truth.

## **Three Unacceptable Choices?**



## **Proving Proof, Circles, Claims, and Other Smoke**

Relativism and postmodernism deceive ungodly thinkers. That's because ungodly thinking is limited to those philosophies. Without divine leading and wisdom, you can't know anything for certain. Without divine leading and wisdom, no one can reason to true premises. And without true premises, no one can know anything. That's the trap skeptics have fallen into.

The problem with proving premises is simple but difficult to explain. How do you know your conclusion is true? You have a premise you use to prove your conclusion. How do you know your premise is true? If your premise isn't true, it can't prove anything. You need proof for your premise. You need a premise for your premise. How do you know your premise for your premise is true? You need a premise for your premise for your premise. You can never prove your premise is true.

What God says is true. God never has this problem. God can reveal the truth to you and give you discernment so you know He is the One Who is revealing the truth. He shows you He cannot lie and He knows all things. He also reveals He wants to reveal certain truths to you and wants to keep certain truths from you. God is the ultimate authority. He's the only legitimate authority. Some intellectuals would object since they think they have authority. They don't.

However, those who don't want to depend on God and honor Him as God never have a way to reason to true premises. Their proof always needs proving no matter how many layers of logic they lay down. They must prove the third set of premises and the fourth and the fifth and so on. It's called an infinite regression of unproved proofs. Finally, they usually get confused and confuse everyone else.

**Ungodly Thinker:** A is true

**Questioner:** How do you know A is true.

**Ungodly Thinker:** A is true because of B

**Questioner:** How do you know B is true.

**Ungodly Thinker:** B is true because of C

**Questioner:** How do you know C is true.

**Ungodly Thinker:** C is true because of D

**Questioner:** How do you know D is true.

The ungodly thinker is no further ahead than when he or she started. That's why a person without God ends in an infinite regression of unproved proofs. This fallacy is a smokescreen. Smokescreens cover the real problem. The real problem is the bare claim. Bare claims are axiomatic thinking fallacy. Axiomatic thinking is the art of making up stuff. Smokescreen fallacies are ways to give the illusion that made-up stuff is true stuff. In all cases, ungodly thinker's premises consist of made-up stuff—if they even bother with premises. Most ungodly thinkers just make bare claims and don't bother with premises. Some ungodly thinkers use all sorts of smokescreen fallacies to make their bare claims appear reasonable. They generally include one or more smokescreen fallacies to give the illusion their made-up stuff is real stuff. However, it's not real. It's just made-up stuff.

A solution for infinite regression is to just hook the logic back into itself. That's called circular reasoning or reasoning in a circle.

We know how old the various rock layers are because of the index fossils in the rocks. And we know how old the index fossils are because of the rock layers they are in.

Only the material realm exists. Therefore, only what I can physically observe and test exists. Since I can't observe or test the spiritual realm, the spiritual realm doesn't exist. Therefore, only the material realm exists.

If ungodly thinkers are skilled persuaders, they might fool you. What they say can seem reasonable. Smokescreen fallacies make it seem reasonable. And yet, where is the proof for what they say? A charming or charismatic person can suck you in, and you may never realize you're being taken along for a ride into the land of fantasy. Most ungodly persuaders don't even know they're lying. They're sincere as they try to convince you of things that aren't true. They're sincerely deluded.

The philosophy of "Rationalism" claims human reason is the source of knowledge. The philosophy claims human reason is a better source of knowledge than either divine revelation or observation. It claims the human mind can conjure knowledge without the benefit of either revelation or observation.

You might wonder how the philosophy of Rationalism deals with the problem of truth. Some rationalists claim they have built-in and true knowledge they can use as premises for logical arguments. Others say they can grasp certain truths directly. In other words, they believe they can make up stuff, and the made-up stuff is true stuff because of some miraculous ability they have. However, there's no proof of the philosophy of Rationalism other than a bare claim and circular reasoning. Rationalists make up stuff and use that made-up stuff to "prove" the philosophy of Rationalism. It's circular support for the claim. In other words, they base their claim "the human mind has built-in and true knowledge" on itself. Rationalism is a circular-reasoning fallacy. For rationalists, all logic resolves to one final premise of "It's true because I think it's true."

Other people believe imagination can self-generate truth. These people use the same loopy logic the Rationalists use to support their claims.

And we've already discussed the people who believe no one can know anything, but there's no proof of that belief either. It's a self-refuting belief as I've already pointed out. These are the skeptics.

In the first century, a man named Agrippa the Skeptic defined a trilemma that no one who assumes Naturalism has successfully refuted in 2,000 years of trying. A trilemma is a problem where only three choices exist, but not one of the choices is a good choice. In this trilemma, all the choices for reasoning are fallacies. You can't know any truth through fallacies. Agrippa observed this problem. He tried to disprove it, but he wasn't able to because he assumed Naturalism.

# Agrippa's Trilemma

Axiomatic Thinking Fallacy	Circular Reasoning Fallacy	Infinite Regression Fallacy
----------------------------------	----------------------------------	-----------------------------------

Here's the trilemma:

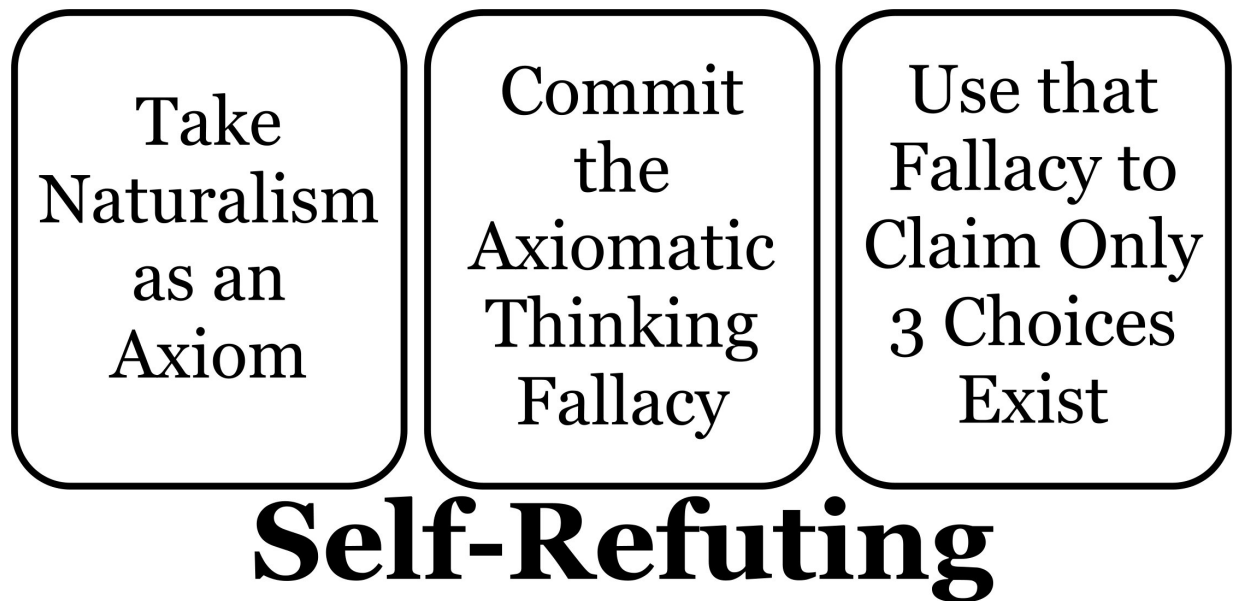
Naturalists have three possible foundations for thought: infinite regression, circular reasoning, and axiomatic thinking (bare claims). These are all fallacies. There's no truth value in any of them. That creates a problem for syllogistic thinking and science. In essence, Agrippa was claiming to know no one can know anything about anything.

I discussed the trilemma in more depth in the three-volume set titled *Real Faith & Reason*. I'll give a short description here. If you

want to know more, you can download that three-volume set for free from [RealReality.org/downloads](http://RealReality.org/downloads).

## Five Choices, Not Three

Fortunately, Agrippa's trilemma is wrong. It's a false trilemma. The trilemma refutes itself. It falls into the pit it dug for others. Agrippa used one of the three fallacies of the trilemma when he claimed the trilemma exists. Therefore, his trilemma is self-refuting. It disproved itself. That's just one problem.



Agrippa also missed some information. His trilemma eliminated two choices that go beyond the three he proposed. Five choices exist, not three. The reason he missed two choices is he took the philosophy of Naturalism as an axiom. He committed the axiomatic thinking fallacy. Then he used that fallacy to claim only three choices exist. The trilemma has three horns. One horn is the axiomatic thinking fallacy. That's why the trilemma refutes itself. And Agrippa left out the two choices that aren't naturalistic. The trilemma assumes Naturalism. Assumption is one flavor of axiomatic thinking fallacy.

The trilemma only limits ungodly thinkers. Ungodly thinkers take Naturalism as an axiom. Naturalism eliminates the chance for ungodly thinkers to be rational. That makes the trilemma irrational since it's the product of ungodly thinking. The trilemma leaves out

the supernatural. It leaves out divine revelation and demonic influence as possible foundations for thinking. Of those two, only divine revelation can get you to truth.

If you eliminate the axiom of Naturalism, you have the freedom to examine the other two choices. Those two choices are **divine revelation** and **demonic influence**.



Then, you have five choices. If you choose infinite regression, circular reasoning, or axiomatic thinking (a fancy way of saying making up stuff), your reasoning will always be irrational. That leaves the two choices: demonic influence or divine revelation.

Demonic influence is real. Part of Naturalism denies this reality. However, this denial of demons also depends on axiomatic thinking. And the denial of demons is also an assertion contrary to fact. Spirits are involved in Wicca, witchcraft, Satanism, the occult, paganism, Neopaganism, religions with multiple gods, religions following impersonal gods, and New Age religions. Those who conjure demons know the demons are real by their experiences with those demons. They might call them helpers, familiar spirits, gods, or other names. They're demons.

Demonic influence is dangerous. It cannot lead to truth. Therefore, demonic influence will always result in irrational thinking. Demons can be extremely clever and deceptive. They answer to Satan who is the father of all lies.

## Divine Revelation, What They Don't Want

You can't use the trilemma to get truth. You can't use demonic influence to get truth. That leaves divine revelation as the only Source of truth. You can only get divine revelation through Jesus Christ. However, those who hate light and truth won't listen to Jesus

Christ. Christ reveals reality through Scripture and every method of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture.

I'll say it again. Those methods of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture never conflict with Scripture. Nor does any part of Scripture conflict with any other part of Scripture. Interpretations (even if they are falsely called "revelations") may conflict with Scripture and often do, but divine revelation never conflicts with divine revelation. Divine revelation never conflicts with the divine revelation in the Bible.

The arbitrary assumption of Naturalism denies God's existence, so it denies divine revelation. And yet, every follower of Christ experiences divine revelation. Christ shepherds, coaches, and corrects everyone who follows Him.

Non-believers experience divine revelation too. Since Christ is the Light and He lights every person who comes into the world, every person experiences the Light of Christ. Some people may reject Christ's Light, but they experience it nonetheless. All who repeatedly fail to acknowledge Christ and thank Him will eventually turn toward darkness. Darkness is what follows when they turn away from the Light. When they turn away from Christ, the darkness becomes gradually more deep. It's a downward spiral. Eventually, godless thinkers will lose all distinction between good and evil, right and wrong, truth and error, or reality and make-believe. You see this in society as many people are moving toward total insanity. That explains why the world is so crazy. And it's going to get much worse.

And there shall be a time of trouble, such as never has been since there was a nation till that time. But at that time your people shall be delivered, everyone whose name shall be found written in the book. *Daniel 12:1 English Standard Version*

Life without Christ eventually leads to closeness to Satan. Even among those who say Satan doesn't exist, they begin to flow in Satan's spirit. They start to carry an evil that any follower of Christ can sense. Many of the godless try to walk a line of self-righteousness and virtue signalling. They want to look good without Jesus Christ.

However, that way of living is empty, and increasing numbers of ungodly thinkers are turning to the occult in one form or another.

On the other hand, some people are seeking the Light, walking in the Light, and becoming the Light. As Christ said:

You are the light of the world. A city on a hill cannot be hidden. ~ *Matthew 5:14 Berean Study Bible*

The path of the righteous is like the first gleam of dawn, shining brighter and brighter until midday. ~ *Proverbs 4:18 Berean Study Bible*

As the children of the Light walk into the Light and shine out, those who hate the Light will hate the children of the Light. The Light is Christ Himself flowing out through His people. The righteousness of Christ flows out like Light. Some people love sin and hate righteousness. They turn from the Light and walk into darkness.

Those who hate the Light react when they're exposed to the Light. They retreat further into the darkness of their own minds. Their senseless minds are darkened. They finally come to the place where they can't tell virtue from wickedness or what's real from what's imaginary. They leave sanity and they're clever at devising evil plans. You're seeing this now all around you as it's playing out before your eyes. It's why the world is so crazy.

The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men **who suppress the truth by their wickedness**. For what may be known about God is plain to them, because **God has made it plain to them**. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood from His workmanship, so that men are without excuse. For **although they knew God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but they became futile in their thinking and darkened in their foolish hearts**. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images of mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. Therefore **God gave them over in**

**the desires of their hearts** to impurity for the dishonoring of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is forever worthy of praise! Amen. For this reason **God gave them over to dishonorable passions**. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. Likewise, the men abandoned natural relations with women and burned with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their error. Furthermore, **since they did not see fit to acknowledge God, He gave them up to a depraved mind**, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with **every kind of wickedness**, evil, greed, and depravity. They are full of **envy, murder, strife, deceit, and malice**. They are **gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant, and boastful**. They **invent new forms of evil; they disobey their parents**. They are **senseless, faithless, heartless, merciless**. Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things are worthy of death, they not only continue to do these things, but also approve of those who practice them. ~ *Romans 1:18-32 Berean Study Bible*

Notice what's happening. They refuse to acknowledge God. God has been giving them everything they need to survive, and this includes the revelation of reality so they can think and survive. But they refuse to thank God or glorify Him. They turn from the Light into darkness. Their foolish hearts, or minds, become dark. And they can't see in the dark. Their thinking becomes futile. They think they're wise, but they start to become fools. Since they prefer darkness, God lets them have their way. Into the darkness they go.

The first chapter of Romans applies also to Christians. You aren't living in a day when you, as a Christian, can get along with theoretical knowledge about Christ. You must know Him. You must be intimate with Him. You must be listening to His voice and allowing Him to correct you and have full sway over you. You must acknowledge Him and glorify Him when He speaks. If you are

walking in the Spirit and learning to yield to God's leading in your life, you're finding out just how difficult it is to do this. How far does God want you to go? He wants you to go all the way with Him.

It's wonderful to be born again, but you must grow up to His fullness. Christ is coming to His body in His parousia, which is His abiding presence. Parousia is a Greek word. The English Bibles generally translate "parousia" as "coming." It means "abiding presence." Christ is coming to His body to live in His body and be seen in His body.

Someone said those Christians who aren't interested in Christ coming to His body won't be happy when Christ returns for His body. Christians who won't listen to God as He's speaking will not be in a good place when Jesus returns. Christians who listen to ungodly people will not be in a good place when Christ returns. And there is no middle ground. There's no place for those who want to be lukewarm, neither hot nor cold.

Today, if you hear His voice, do not harden your hearts, as you did in the rebellion. ~ *Hebrews 3:15b Berean Study Bible*

God blesses those who listen to Him. If you listen and yield to the righteousness of Christ so Christ does His works through you, God changes you. God transforms you step by step. God transfigures you from glory to glory into the image of Christ by the Spirit of the Lord. This is what it is when you walk in the Spirit. You don't stay in one place. You become a wayfaring person. The Holy Spirit moves you. You're a stranger in a strange land looking for a city.

No one comes to Jesus Christ except by the voice of God. The Father draws each one to the Son. God speaks to them through at least one of His methods of divine revelation and probably through many of those methods. If you speak by the Spirit of God, God may bring someone to faith by the words He speaks through you.

Most people don't base their beliefs on rational thought. They don't make decisions based on rational thought unless they yield themselves to the Holy Spirit. Without the Holy Spirit, people make decisions based on emotion and fallacies. And then they use other

fallacies to try to make their decisions seem rational. That's why fallacies work so well. Irrational thinking can become a habit and seem normal. Fallacies can become a way of life. When deceived people run into some element of the truth, they think the truth is strange or even evil.

Jesus Christ is the Truth and the only Source of Truth. He's real and knowable. Everyone who seeks Him finds Him. He directs, instructs, and disciplines every person who follows Him. Hopefully, I've brought this down to the nuts-and-bolts level and made it practical.

## **Experts and Intellectuals**



Teachers of logic talk a lot about some things called “syllogisms,” which are ways of stating logical arguments. I cover syllogisms in the reference section of this book. Syllogisms assume true premises. However, those who teach about syllogisms rarely concern themselves with true premises. They just assume their premises. They refer to premises as assumptions. Here's the problem. Premises must be true for logic to be sound, but assumptions are never known truth. Imagine how confusing that is for students.

- Premises must be known to be true.
- Assumptions are never known to be true.
- Assumptions are premises.

These teachers probably know their reasoning isn't rational when they fail to base their reasoning on truth. They probably know sound logic requires true premises. They most likely know deep down that truth is absolute by definition. They must know the human mind has no path to truth on its own. And yet, these teachers don't teach this to their students.

That's why logic becomes incomprehensible and confusing to students, but the students finally conform to the idea that they don't need true premises. The students may not even consider the question

of whether they need true premises. The teacher and the textbook may not talk about truth. The students then lose the distinction between reality and make-believe. They've been educated into a deep level of ignorance. This isn't education. It's brainwashing. Brainwashed people become dogmatic in their ignorance. As the Bible says, "Thinking themselves wise, they become fools."

You find bad logic in sources that supposedly teach logic or critical thinking. Those sources should be examples of rational thought, but they're filled with irrational thinking. They forget to talk about the true premise. Not only that, but they have clever substitutes for truth. Here's an example of this kind of teaching I found online:

All reasoning is based on DATA, INFORMATION and EVIDENCE. Restrict your claims to those supported by the data you have. Search for information that opposes your position as well as information that supports it. Make sure that all information used is clear, accurate, and relevant to the question at issue. Make sure you have gathered sufficient information. ~  
<https://www.criticalthinking.org/resources/articles/helping-students-assess-their-thinking.shtml>

There's nothing wrong with this statement on the surface. Every part is helpful. However, it misses some vital conditions.

*First*, not all reasoning is based on data, information, and evidence. Go to any discussion group, and you'll see a lot of reasoning but very little that's based on data, information, or evidence. Mostly, you see logical fallacies. Most of the logical fallacies are strongly stated bare claims. Most people don't even try to bring in data, information, or evidence. They may use magic words like "data," "information," "evidence," or "science." However, they don't show you even a mirage of any data, information, or evidence. They just use the words as magic words. They have phantom data, phantom information, and phantom evidence. They might have phantom science. Then, they pretend they have shown you data, information, evidence, or science. They didn't really show it. They only said the magic words.

*Second*, even if someone uses a premise, you'll find problems with the premise. It's not true. The premise may consist of data, information, and evidence interpreted in ways that go beyond the rules of logic. If you ask people how they know their premise is true, they may say, "I saw it on CNN" or "I saw it on Fox News." They might say, "Everyone believes this." They may say other people told them, they read it in a book, or they saw it in a movie. They may give some other unreliable reason you should believe them.

Let's look at an example. Evolutionism blurs the line between truth and conceptual dreams. Evolutionism mixes scientific observation with stories and fallacies. Evolutionists often use phantom science and the magic-word fallacy. Using the magic-word fallacy, Evolutionism repeats magic words like "science" or "evidence." And yet, the evolutionists show you no science or direct evidence for the stories. The stories are fanciful tales that go beyond any science or direct evidence. It's called phantom science. Scientists can't observe the stories of Evolutionism. Nor can they use these stories to make a useful product.

Persuaders use the same tactic for age-of-the-earth stories and climate alarmism. These are just three of many examples. When you hear magic words like this, but you aren't able to carefully examine the proof, you should be skeptical. You need to see how they observed and tested the so-called "proof" and exactly why they think the so-called "proof" proves their points.

They might even claim to base their premise on the Bible. They might say, "The Bible says God wants you to live in a communist utopia." Some are saying the Bible ignores sexual sins. Even though God speaks through the Bible, it's possible to twist God's words. The human mind can make nonsense out of the Bible, and Satan quotes the Bible to deceive you. There's only one Source for true premises, and that Source is divine revelation that comes from Jesus Christ. You need a real relationship with Jesus Christ. Even with the Bible, the Holy Spirit must speak the words of God into your hearts. And yet, your preconceived ideas can block your hearing.

But their minds were blinded. For until this day the same veil remains unlifted in the **reading of the Old**

**Testament**, because the *veil* is taken away in Christ. But even to this day, **when Moses is read**, a veil lies on their heart. Nevertheless when one turns to the Lord, the veil is taken away. ~ *2 Corinthians 3:14-16 New King James Version*

You need to turn to the Lord. Without the Lord in your process of logic, you add to the data, information, or evidence. On the other hand, you may filter out some data, information, or evidence. Filtering can give you a skewed view of reality. It's a form of lying. This adding and filtering requires no effort. The deceitful and desperately wicked human mind does it automatically.

I've talked to many of these Christians who try to interpret Scripture through the veil of their fleshly minds. Some are willing to seek the mind of Christ. Most refuse to seek the mind of Christ. Most prefer the darkness of their fleshly minds.

*Third*, there's the problem of the data, information, and evidence. Can you examine the source of the data, information, or evidence? Where do you get it? Do you look at websites and blindly trust what's written there? Should you recklessly trust government agencies? Should you uncritically trust universities? Would it make sense to unquestioningly trust the word of scientists? Should you obediently trust "news" organizations or "fact-checkers?"

These persuaders tell you to fall in line. You're supposed to kneel to them in submission. Even some social media organizations threaten you and censor you if you say anything that conflicts with their message-control system. If you think these sources are pure, you're fooling yourself. Much of what persuaders call "data" is fake. Persuaders use false "information" and "evidence." Much of what persuaders call "science" has no basis in observations. You seldom can examine the actual source of the "data," "information," or "evidence."

I mentioned Internet discussion groups as a place where you can see logical errors and irrational thinking. However, this problem goes beyond Internet discussion groups. It's epidemic in classes, lectures, news programs, books, videos, and every other form of communication. You'll see it among intellectuals, experts, professors,

pundits, and almost everywhere. You also find it among your friends and family members. Irrational thinking is not the exception. Rational thinking is rare.

An astronaut says there's no doubt the universe is full of life but that this life is so different from what you would expect that you can't see it. Think about that reasoning.

The reason there is no evidence is you can't see the evidence, so there is evidence, but you just can't see it.

Premise: you can't see the evidence for the supposed "life in the universe."

Conclusion: The universe is full of life.

The fact that you can't see the evidence proves the universe is full of life.

Fantastic!

A top evolutionist tells you evolution can be observed but not when it's happening. The premise is you can't observe evolution while it's happening. The conclusion is you can observe evolution.

Premise: You can't observe evolution while it's happening.

Conclusion: You can observe evolution, just not when it's happening.

The fact that you can't observe evolution while it's happening proves you can observe evolution happening when it's not happening.

Really?

Another evolutionist tells you the problem with those who don't believe in the stories of evolution is they lack imagination.

Premise: someone's imagination.

Conclusion: the stories of molecules-to-humanity evolution happened.

Imagination proves that evolution happened.

Oh?

These examples are real. Real people said those things. You need true premises, and the premises must prove the conclusion. Without truth, sanity disappears.

## The Godless Outlook

Most godless thinkers don't easily admit they can't get knowledge. Not even those who teach postmodernism admit they can't get knowledge. Keep in mind that postmodernism is the belief that no one can attain knowledge. They teach that, and they still end up on both sides of the argument. They claim no one can know anything. Then they make a special case for themselves. You can't blame them for using a double-standard. After all, how can they argue for postmodernism if they admit they don't know anything?

Some of them will finally admit, after much debate, they can't know anything. Then, they claim to know all things by claiming to know Jesus Christ can't reveal reality to you. Worse than that is what they usually do next. The next move they usually make is to reverse themselves and find some way to justify their own thinking. They claim to be the **right** ones after claiming **no right or wrong exists**. And they claim you are in **error** after claiming **no truth or error exist**.

I've patiently worked through this pattern of thinking with many godless thinkers. Doing that is time-consuming. It requires persistence and a respectful attitude. It takes active-listening skills and patience. After well over 100 conversations like this, a pattern developed. I could predict where the ungodly thinker would take the conversation. Here's the pattern:

1. The ungodly thinker insists he or she is correct and the one who knows.
2. The ungodly thinker finally admits he or she knows nothing.
3. The ungodly thinker claims no one (and that always included me) can know anything.
4. The ungodly thinker claims Christ can't reveal anything to anyone, which is a claim to know every human being's inner spiritual experiences.

5. The ungodly thinker finds a way to justify making claims.
6. The ungodly thinker insists he or she is correct and is the one who knows.

Since the ungodly thinker knows nothing, the ungodly thinker can't rationally make any claims. If the ungodly thinker can't rationally make any claims, it's irrational for the ungodly thinker to claim no one can know anything. And yet, the ungodly thinker claims to know my inner experiences with Christ. The ungodly thinker ends up claiming to be all-knowing. I've had a few who claimed to be a god. Some claim to know God doesn't exist, which is a claim to know all things.

Skepticism is an empty outlook. It's a godless outlook. With such an outlook, there's no rational reason for goodness, kindness, or love. Skeptics may gain personally from some sort of imitation goodness, kindness, or love. Skeptics may want to make themselves appear to be good people. It makes them feel good. Plus, it makes others trust them and like them, which is useful for their self-interest. What they do is self-serving.

By the way, this self-serving self-righteousness is a mental trap into which any of us could easily fall. Guard your heart. We, as Christians, spend far too much of our time in godless thinking. We forget to live in the presence of the Almighty God. We forget to tune in to God. We tune out far too often. We come into the spiritual realm, and we go back out. However, one day, you'll go in and never come back out. God will cleanse you from your fleshly nature and form you into the likeness of Christ.

The godless outlook is meaningless, purposeless, and ultimately unsatisfying. God created you to connect to the Almighty in love. In that bond, you find the only place where meaning, purpose, and satisfaction can exist. Scripture says "I shall be satisfied when I awake with His likeness." You can only be satisfied as God transfigures you into the likeness of Christ. Without that holy union with the divine, the godless person reaches out for meaning, purpose, and satisfaction but always comes up empty. Mick Jagger of the Rolling Stones sang, "I can't get no satisfaction." And you can have no satisfaction without Christ. So, the godless mind looks for

satisfaction in all sorts of places that can't yield satisfaction. The result is depression and addiction. In the end, many naturalists turn to the occult trying to find meaning. They end up enslaved to Lucifer in one way or another.

The godless outlook is the reason the world is in chaos. It's the reason schools and news programs promote all their senseless ideas.

## **Information Warfare**



We're hearing more about information warfare lately. Most of those who are talking about information warfare don't realize how long the war has been going on. The war got hot in the 1800s. James Hutton, Charles II, Charles Darwin, and Charles Kingsley laid the foundation for today's information warriors. First, James Hutton and Charles Lyell had to create an illusion. They developed stories about the earth being much older than the Bible defines. And they succeeded. They got theologians to shoehorn long ages into the Bible. Advances in science have since debunked all Hutton's and Lyell's old-earth arguments, but they had already done irreversible damage. The information warriors of that day used all the tactics of today's information warriors. They used magic words like "science" and "evidence." They had no science or evidence. They just used the words "science" and "evidence." They used personal attacks and coercion.

Old-earthism set the stage for Charles Darwin. Information warriors promoted Darwin's doctrine of Evolutionism. The fake news media brutally attacked preachers like Charles Spurgeon who refused to endorse the new religion of Evolutionism. From that day to this, information warriors have battled to protect and preserve the foundation of Old-earthism and Evolutionism. Evolutionism prepared the ground for the present information war. The warriors have built on that foundation. Here are a few examples of this information war and what the godless warriors promote:

- A fluid interpretation of the U. S. Constitution

- A fluid interpretation of the Bible
- The ongoing sexual revolution
- Duel justice system
- Systematic voter fraud
- Special interest groups
- A godless new world order

We all know persuasive people. Some people are more persuasive than others. They know how to use voice inflection and words to convince and persuade others. You'll find an entire section of your local library dedicated to books on sales, negotiation, and persuasion. The world of advertising is a world where persuasive people apply their skills to convince you to do something or avoid doing something. Persuasive people have developed and taught various methods of persuasion. Some of these methods use hypnotic techniques and deceptive practices. Politicians and salespeople often take classes to learn how to use advanced techniques such as neurolinguistic programming, which is a method of hypnosis. They learn how to hypnotize you without you realizing they're doing it. At higher levels, some persuaders have artificial-intelligence computer applications they can use to analyze human languages and formulate sentences that will persuade the majority of people in a certain group. I've gone over a few of the techniques persuaders use against you and those around you. Couple these techniques with peer pressure, fear-mongering, and hate-mongering, and you're living in perilous times.

However, no one has to allow the persuaders to deceive them. There is a place where deceit, lies, uncertainty, and fear can't reach you. That's the point of this book, and you already have enough information to harness it in your life.

## **Repeated From Many Sources**

If you're not on your guard, these persuasive methods are surprisingly effective. A well-formed message that's repeated on various forms of media can take effect on you with as few as five impressions.

They target us. A few impressions can make us dogmatic. We hear the same message in classes, on the news, in a movie, in a public service announcement, and everywhere else. They ignite our emotions like fear, anger, or hate to make their persuasive techniques even more effective. Once convinced by this form of brainwashing, we don't feel brainwashed. We feel right and righteous. We become dogmatic.

I've been drawn in by these tactics a few times. It's hard to avoid it. The Holy Spirit eventually exposed what had happened to me but only because I was seeking the wisdom of Christ. This kind of brainwashing is going on constantly. The tactics are the same tactics cults use to make their followers dogmatic. Millions of people have become victims of the cult that controls the message. Millions have become victims of the great-false-prophet system.

Since their dogmatism didn't come through rational thought, rational thought can't remove their dogmatism. They won't change their minds even when confronted with conflicting facts. Facts won't correct dogmatism. The dogmatic person hates facts. Facts seem like personal attacks since the dogmatic person has absorbed deception and made it part of himself or herself. Facts start a fight.

It just takes a few repeated impressions. Those impressions have no substance. They don't need substance. They bypass logic and sanity. The false-prophet system injects its lies with emotion and rationalizations rather than sound reason. Anyone who listens to the lies becomes the target. The lies become part of the target's inner worldview. And the worldview is a strong delusion. It has become a conviction, an inner stronghold in the target's mind. And the target doesn't know what happened.

It has become increasingly obvious some organization is controlling and coordinating most means of communication. The messages are too uniform for any other explanation. You can see some power-players. You can see some mechanisms of control. However, it's futile to guess beyond what you can see. You do see a constant tightening of control. Those who don't exactly parrot the message as they've been told are being systematically removed. Their platforms are destroyed. They're banned from classrooms, social

media, government employment, influential positions, or any other stage that might allow them to have a voice. They're persecuted through the courts.

Many theories exist about motivations. One thing is clear. Satan is behind it. Mostly, you can see the effects. It can't be one individual in control. It must a group. Judging from the messages they're pushing, it's an ungodly, immoral, globalist group. Two kinds of organizations exist: those organizations controlled by ungodly globalists and those organizations ungodly globalists want to control. They work craftily to take control of every lever of power and influence. Sleepers are everywhere. What you see requires billions if not trillions of dollars in resources. It appears to be closely following satanic principles and trying to influence society in that way. A group of people want to fundamentally change the world. Christians have been in the way. The members of the cabal want a godless new world order.

What are the messages? They push rebellion against God. They try to discredit the Bible. They advocate sexual sin. They give you free pornography. They open the door to mind-numbing drugs and alcohol. They endorse Marxism and call it "socialism." They advocate Naturalism and Materialism. They enforce Evolutionism. That's just a sampling.

It's bigger than that. They want to destroy those who know Jesus Christ. They want absolute control.

## **Fake Polls**

As another method of indoctrination, ungodly manipulators have been using fake polls to change public opinions for almost 100 years. When they abandoned truth and denied the Source of all truth, they left society without a way to tell reality from make-believe. They declared truth dead when they declared God dead. Even in churches, Christians stopped listening to the voice of God and receiving His truth. Christians wandered from Christ to an empty religion that was based on human reasoning mixed with human emotions. They began to mouth creeds, learn doctrines, and even read the Bible without ever knowing Christ or hearing Him speak.

The polls use a fallacy called “appeal to popularity.” The ungodly manipulators know about the fallacy. They use the appeal-to-popularity fallacy. Fallacies work. Of course, the number of people who believe in a lie doesn’t transform the lie into the truth. However, humans tend toward fitting in. You and I naturally want to be like everyone else. We don’t want to be weird or left out. You feel uncomfortable when you don’t fit in.

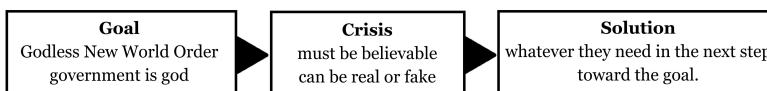
That’s where fake polls come in. When they wanted to normalize sexual perversions, they found that fake polls were an excellent way to boost their effort. They also used the power of storytelling in the form of novels, movies, and such. And they used fake education and fake news to help things along. They used fake experts and professionals to give the message a sense of legitimacy. They used many other fallacies to convincingly slip lies into education and news presentations. And they’ve been wildly successful.

They started by encouraging heterosexual adultery and fornication. Then, they gradually moved on to normalizing other forms of perversion, and that effort is ongoing. It’s getting increasingly insane. All over the world, people conformed their thinking to the ungodly narrative. They have changed society quickly. The manipulators have used polls for every change. And they also use fake political polls to try to disrupt or influence the outcomes of elections. And they use opinion polls to change what people consider to be acceptable.

## New Normal

Here’s another tactic they use against you. It’s called “The Overton Window.” Maybe you never heard of the Overton Window, but you’ve experienced it repeatedly. If you’ve heard terms like “re-imagine” or “new normal,” those terms are part of the Overton Window tactic. You’ve heard about hope and change. You may not have heard the term Hegelian Dialectic.

### Hegelian Dialectic Overton Window



Here’s what the Overton Window is. At any given time, most people have an idea of what they consider acceptable or normal. The

Overton Window is the groupthink of society. Society rejects anyone who steps outside the window. The window is what society generally views as normal or acceptable. The general view of what is acceptable is the Overton Window. Inside the Window is what society will accept. Outside the Window are all the things society won't accept.

The manipulators have a tactic for moving the Overton Window using a crisis. Power-players use a crisis to change the worldviews of millions of people. This tactic is one of the main ways power-players manipulate society by moving the Overton Window. The crisis can be real or fake, but it must be convincing. That's how they change public opinion in big ways. They manipulate the groupthink of an entire society using one crisis after another. They use fear or anger to manipulate you. You've seen how the news media, education, and politicians will suddenly jump on a certain event or problem. They begin a frenzy of fear-mongering. Then, they're able to move the Overton Window by announcing the "brilliant solution" to the problem. They change your worldview, and you accept a new normal.

Human beings like to keep everything within what they consider normal. You naturally close your mind to ideas outside your worldview. Your worldview is what you consider acceptable. You aren't easily swayed. However, when you are afraid or angry, your mind opens for a while. Your mind searches for a solution. You find a solution or someone supplies a solution for you. Then your mind closes again on a new normal.

Have you noticed that the world is jumping from one crisis to the next? The manipulators have learned how to create, invent, or discover a crisis and use it to create fear or anger. Then, before the minds of the people they're manipulating have closed, they provide a solution. The solution creates a new normal and a new Overton Window of what is acceptable. The solution is often that you need more government control, you need to give up some freedom, or you need to endorse one sin or another.

Never allow a crisis to go to waste. ~ Rahm Emmanuel  
regarding the coronavirus

## **Message-Control**

The members of the cabal control just about every magazine, TV news program, and radio station. Anyone living in the mainstream media bubble, getting their understanding of reality from these sources, is separated from reality. The media is skilled at changing and cementing false worldviews. The media will deceive anyone who yields to it. Those who follow the media will find it difficult to handle the truth. Those who watch the latest movies and listen to mainstream media will be living in an imaginary world, but they'll think they're the most intelligent and informed people. They'll be dogmatic and irrational. No evidence will convince them to abandon the fear, anger, and hate they allowed the message-control system to implant in their minds.

The members of the cabal tightly control science, medicine, and education. The cabal punishes anyone who steps out of line. No one dares question the cabal. No one dares discover information that doesn't support the anti-God, anti-Christ, anti-Bible, globalist message. Ungodly globalists work to discredit the few educators, radio stations, news outlets, TV stations, doctors, and scientists outside their control.

They control the tech giants, which include Google, YouTube, Facebook, and Twitter. They're sophisticated at changing worldviews on a massive scale. They can regulate what you're able to see online to a shocking degree. Their influence extends to financial institutions, so they're able to put pressure on anyone who tries to compete with them.

The ungodly globalists control many of the churches. Globalists created the World Council of Churches (WCC) to create a new humanist religion to replace Christianity, Islam, and all other religions. Many churches work with the WCC and promote their new religion while calling it "Christianity." They use their religious organizations and denominations to advance the globalist agenda. The Catholic Church hasn't formally joined the WCC yet, but they are helping to promote the globalist agenda and they work with the WCC. The Pope has expressed support for a new humanist religion. However, many in the Catholic Church are protesting.

This false-prophet system drives Christians like goats. When they use their many voices to tell a coordinated lie, the lie quickly becomes “common knowledge.” It’s not true, but most people believe it’s true. Unstable Christians fall in line. Preachers declare the new lie from their pulpits.

## **False Knowledge**



## **Religious Scientism**

Among the popular idols of the day, you find science. It’s called “Scientism.” Scientism exalts science to god-like status. It’s a false belief that science is the best way to find knowledge. Scientism transforms science into a religion.

Once science becomes a religion, some scientists over-extend science with leveraged logic. They add stories to what they observe, and they end with fantasy instead of science. This kind of “science” doesn’t create any products you can test to see whether they work.

The word “science” comes from the Greek word “scientia.” The Greek word means knowledge. Many people think scientists come up with knowledge by observing, testing, and experimenting, but science isn’t about knowledge or truth. Helpful science is about what works or doesn’t work. It’s possible to directly test whether something works. It’s not possible to directly test a theory. Scientists test theories indirectly because they can’t test them directly. Indirect testing is much less reliable than direct testing. While theories may drive inquiry, theories don’t directly produce products you can test to see whether they work. Some theories, such as the Theory of Evolution, never resulted in a product you couldn’t have created without the theory.

## ***Not Really Science***

Naturalistic science never gives absolute answers. It doesn’t give absolute answers even if scientists use science correctly. You can

observe and experiment. However, that only suggests what seems to work or not work. Practical and applied science creates useful and testable products. However, much of what persuaders call “science” isn’t science at all. Much of what persuaders call “science” is just storytelling and produces no testable product.

Stories are stories. Observations are observations. However, godless scientists make it hard to tell the difference between stories and observations. Godless scientists tell stories in a way that avoids conflicts with what you can observe, but that’s not the same as basing their stories on observations.

Consider a detective questioning a crafty murderer. “Where were you between 10:00 and 11:00 last night?” The murderer is likely to tell a story. The story will fit what the detective can check after the murder. The murderer, being crafty, will tell an uncheckable lie. However, the murderer won’t say he committed the murder. His story will avoid obvious conflicts with what the detective can observe.

The difference between stories and observations is the stories go beyond the observations. The stories go beyond what anyone knows. The proof for Evolutionism always lies in the unknown. Evolutionism is supported by the mists of storytelling. The stories consist of made-up stuff. And the stories are based on imagination. If it’s science, it’s the science of imagination. Imagination isn’t a dependable way of knowing the truth. And imagination allows limitless ways to justify mistakes and false ideas.

## *Inconsistency*

I mentioned Evolutionism. When new observations conflict with the stories of Evolutionism, godless scientists create new stories to shoehorn the new observations into the original story. They may have to rewrite entire sections of the story. If a murderer changed his story that way, you would think the murderer is lying and is guilty. If scientists change their stories, they tell you, “That’s the way science works.” They tell you, “Science changes when new observations come along.”

# SCIENTIFIC METHOD

Question	Research	Hypothesis	Test	True/False	Conclusion
----------	----------	------------	------	------------	------------

The scientific method has given you amazing products from phones to jets to cars. Technology often starts with the scientific method. God revealed the scientific method as a way to bless you. And science works well for creating testable results. You can test a phone, a jet, or a car. These products work or they don't work. However, scientists are being dishonest when they use the products of real science to give false authority to the claims of false science.

Science doesn't work well in matters where you can't test a product to see if it works. You can't test what happened in the past, what will happen in the future, how the human spirit, mind, and body work together, or what's happening in the spiritual realm. Theories about any of these don't produce testable products. And yet, scientists make dogmatic statements about the future, the spiritual realm, and the spirit-mind-body connection. As scientists try to project science further back into the past or forward into the future, they become less reliable. As they move further from observation in the present, they leverage their logic more. They do more storytelling. And some scientists also want to delve into other areas where they can't observe or test. That leaves storytelling as their scientific method. They talk about the nature of the mind, the nature of the soul. They try to analyze the spiritual realm. They tell stories, mutter the word "science," and expect you to believe their stories. That creates a false illusion of knowledge. They may use the word "science," but it's storytelling. It isn't science.

Deep-time Naturalistic history is built on the imaginary thinking of the adherents, and we know imaginary thinking is not a fact. Data can be skewed to fit the imaginary thinking. ~ Allen J. Dunckley

## *Conspiracy?*

Ever since someone thought up the slur "conspiracy theory," ungodly thinkers have been using the slur to control the message. They find it helpful to shout "conspiracy theory" whenever they need to censor someone. That's the case with scientists as well. Every

group struggles under the limits of a group-held paradigm. Scientists call their shared paradigm “the scientific consensus,” but it’s not a true consensus. It’s a majority opinion. It’s “the scientific body of knowledge.”

Woe to those who challenge “the scientific body of knowledge.” Those who challenge the elites will suffer in their careers. They may even lose their jobs and find it difficult to find new positions. Their peers will shun and abuse them. Scientists and intellectuals have even physically assaulted those who disagree with the elites. They have sometimes destroyed their research. They destroyed the evidence.

You shouldn’t be surprised that humans are humans. Even scientists are humans. It’s not a conspiracy. They don’t usually decide to be dishonest. It’s human nature. Everyone has a perspective. Everyone has an inner paradigm. Your paradigm is your inner world based on the way you think reality is. It’s an inner fake-reality. Some people call it their reality. I heard someone call it, “your truth.” It’s a complete inner fake-reality that seems more real than real reality. Everyone has one.

It’s also human nature to go with the flow. Even if you disagree, you’re uncomfortable being the only one making waves. You go along. You adopt the group-held fake-reality as parts of your individual fake-realities. Some groups invent procedures and means of pressure and retribution. Scientists shut up and fit in for good reason.

Your personal fake-reality is powerful for filtering your perceptions. Whatever isn’t part of your fake-reality seems crazy, insane, and unreal. Changing fake-realities generally requires a powerful experience. Group-held fake-realities are much harder to change than personal fake-realities.

I’m writing about what occurs naturally. I don’t have insider information about any conspiracies. I don’t have any theories. I’ve personally witnessed the anti-God slant in government agencies. I’ve noted the discrimination. Others have written about what they’ve witnessed. In his book *Dark Agenda, The War to Destroy Christian*

*America*, David Horowitz exposes what he calls a “crusade against God.”

They want a world in which humanity is finally free from myths and superstitions. They believe in a vision of a world of “new men and women,” liberated. ~ David Horowitz *Dark Agenda, The War to Destroy Christian America*

The Beatle’s song *Imagine* was all about this vision.

Imagine there's no heaven  
It's easy if you try  
No hell below us  
Above you only sky  
Imagine all the people  
Living for today

Other verses describe a Marxist utopia. If you follow the writings of the globalists, they seem to want a godless new world order. They think it would be wonderful if you could just get rid of Jesus Christ.

The war began with the removal of the religious presence from America’s public schools. Since then, it has only grown more divisive and intense. ~ David Horowitz *Dark Agenda, The War to Destroy Christian America*

You do see a coordinated effort to get rid of Christ. You see evidence of some trying to set up this dream world. Many people think there is a conspiracy. You can research that if you’re interested. For this book, I’m concentrating on the One Who is the Source of all truth, power, and authority.

## ***Reliability Rules***

- The further scientists stray from what they observe and test in the present, the less reliable their science.
  - The further into the past or future they try to project, the less reliable they are.
  - The further into the spiritual realm they try to imagine, the less reliable they are.
  - The further they try to imagine unobservable and untestable causes, the less reliable they are.

- The further they try to imagine unobservable and untestable entities, the less reliable they are.
- The more scientists use axioms, the less reliable their science.
  - The more scientists filter using Naturalism, the less reliable they are.
  - The more scientists filter using Materialism, the less reliable they are.
  - The more scientists filter using Uniformitarianism, the less reliable they are.
  - The more scientists refuse to follow the evidence because the evidence conflicts with their preconceived ideas, the less reliable they are.

In the three-volume set titled *Real Faith & Reason*, I go into careful detail on science. Since I've thoroughly covered that type of science in *Real Faith & Reason*, that's all I'm going to say about it here. If you're interested in that subject, you can download the book free at [RealReality.org/downloads](http://RealReality.org/downloads). Science isn't about truth or knowledge of the truth. Helpful science is about finding what works or doesn't work.

In this book, I'm dealing with knowledge of the truth rather than what you call "science" today. What is knowledge of the truth? It's the kind of knowledge that sets you free. Scientism is one road to false knowledge, but many roads lead to false knowledge.

## **False Knowledge**

In his first letter to Timothy, Apostle Paul mentions "science falsely called." This letter says:

O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called. ~ *Timothy 6:20 King James Version*

The word, "science" was translated from the Greek word "scientia" as I mentioned. Scientia means "knowledge." Some theologians have gotten "scientia" confused with the English word "science," but this Scripture is speaking to you about false knowledge. False knowledge

takes many forms, but the truth is different from false knowledge because all truth is absolute. Some examples may help explain the problem of false knowledge.

O Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you. Avoid irreverent, empty chatter and the opposing arguments of so-called “knowledge,” ~ *1 Timothy 6:20 Berean Study Bible*

A man I knew was shopping in one of the Canadian provinces. When he came out of the store to go to his car, a snowstorm suddenly hit. He couldn't see anything. The snowstorm resulted in a complete whiteout. The snow was so intense all he could see was white. He lost his orientation and was disoriented in the blinding snow. Because he couldn't see anything but snow, he knew he could freeze to death if he didn't find his way. At this same moment, a mutual friend of ours in a building on the outskirts of the town saw the dangerous weather. God gave our mutual friend a word of knowledge and he said, “Someone may be in danger. You need to pray.” The people there joined him in prayer, and the whiteout was gone instantly. The man who had been lost in the snow was no longer lost and praised God even though he didn't know his friends had prayed. And the people who had prayed also gave praise to God even though they didn't know God had intervened and saved their friend from death.

Here's the difference between what is falsely called “knowledge” and true knowledge. The culture and false science assume God doesn't exist or that God doesn't do anything. You recognize this assumption as the philosophy of Naturalism. It's the false belief that every effect has a natural cause. Here's another way to say it. The philosophy of Naturalism claims God doesn't cause any physical effect. Naturalism claims no spiritual entity causes any material or physical effect. The philosophy of Naturalism saturates our culture and affects every person at a deep level. It limits your ability to believe what God is telling you.

The people in this true story gave glory to God for what He had done. On the other hand, the meteorologists became confused. Where had all the snow suddenly gone? Their false science only accounted for some factors causing the events of weather. They denied the possibility of anything outside the material realm. They

left God out of the equation. They didn't even consider God. The ungodly scientists had to rationalize a naturalistic explanation for what had just happened.

A woman I know was diagnosed with rheumatoid arthritis. She could no longer dress herself, and the X-rays showed bone spurs impinging on her nerves. The doctor said there was very little he could do. She went to a second doctor and got the same story. However, this woman went to a church that followed the scriptural order of elders overseeing and pastoring. And she called for the elders who laid hands on her and anointed her with oil as they prayed according to the pattern established in James five. Two people at that meeting had visions of the bone spurs dissolving. That week, the woman felt much better, so she could move and dress herself. She still kept her appointment with the doctor, but the doctor was visibly shaken by the obvious healing. The woman told the doctor the elders prayed for her. The doctor told her it's OK to believe in God, but that she should believe in medicine too. He took another set of X-rays. Then, he said, "Well I don't know where they went, but they're gone now." The doctor couldn't see because of something falsely called "knowledge." He assumed God doesn't heal anyone. The woman and all the faithful who heard about it, on the other hand, were praising God. They were seeing reality as it is.

A Christian friend was driving alone in his car toward a green traffic light. Suddenly, a loud audible voice said, "Stop!" The man hit the brakes and screeched to a stop just before entering the intersection. And it probably saved his life because a car ran the red light and sped through the intersection just in front of him. If God, or an angel, hadn't spoken and this man hadn't stopped, that car would have hit him broadside. This man gave glory to God. He knew God kept him safe. When miracles like this happen, many use something they falsely call "knowledge" to make up naturalistic, materialistic explanations. They're making up stories to claim God does nothing. Thinking they're wise, they become fools.

I could go on about prayer and healing of the broken neck that was suddenly fine, but two x-rays and a cat-scan had previously confirmed it was broken. I could talk about the abdominal growths that were suddenly gone, the knee that was suddenly made normal

after confirmed diagnosis. I could mention hopelessly ruined relationships that have been restored. I remember prayer correcting career problems and reversing financial difficulties. I could talk about prayer raising the dead to life. Something falsely called “knowledge” or “science” would be scratching around to make up some rationalistic explanation for these examples. However, true knowledge gives glory to God for what He has done.

These are just a few events I know about personally. Others have seen greater miracles. I’ve read about some of them and marveled. Every time God moves, some people work very hard to make it seem as if God were not moving. They do that with something that’s falsely called “knowledge.”

so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, ~ *Romans 1:20b-22 King James Version*

## **The Formally-Correct Fallacy**



The formally-correct fallacy is thinking just because the form of logic is valid the logic is sound.

Sound logic must have both valid form and true premises. Some students come out of logic classes thinking if they reduce a statement to a syllogism with valid form they automatically prove the conclusion is true. Some classes even reduce logic to a symbolic language. It’s called symbolic logic. It looks like some kind of advanced math. You could convert any statement to this symbolic language. Teachers tell you this symbolic language avoids ambiguity. However, I have witnessed that those who use the symbolic language can hide many informal fallacies using the language.

What using the language does is give the illusion of mathematical precision. I’m not saying the symbolic language is bad. It can help

reveal a formal fallacy. However, it may also misrepresent what someone else said. On the other hand, it doesn't remove the human tendency toward fallacy. It also gives the illusion that valid form is all that's needed for sound logic. However, as already stated, valid form isn't enough to establish truth. Valid form is necessary but not enough. You must also have a true premise. Many teachers don't teach this fact. They don't tell students premises must be true. They don't tell students about the weakness of the human mind without Christ. You know why they avoid or confuse the truth.

You can state logic as a syllogism to expose formal fallacies. Formal fallacies are flaws in the argument's form. You can restate an argument as a syllogism. That's a little clumsy for daily living, but it's a tool. Here's a problem that makes it hard to analyze the logic. Most people leave out parts of their argument. That leaves you guessing the missing information to complete the syllogism. But guessing isn't an accurate way of knowing.

Many books on logic focus on the form of the argument. They define the difference between a sound argument and a valid form. And yet, they tend to have a low threshold for truth. They explain a certain number of fallacies as tests for truth, but they don't go to the root. They don't go to the basis for the claim. If you allow them to focus only on the form, you let them fool you.

Since schools do a poor job of teaching the problem of the unproven premise, I'm making special note of it here. I'm doing that even though I've already made it clear that all rational thought has to be based on truth. If you don't base your thoughts on truth, your thoughts are not rational. Logic books tend to leave out the most important component. They don't tell you how you can know the truth? The solution is to go back to the root of how you know. You must dig down to the starting point of thinking. The starting point cannot be something you just made up. It can't be something someone else made up. It must be absolute. Otherwise, you can't truthfully say you know anything. All you can say is, "That's what I prefer to be true, so that's what I prefer to believe."

A syllogism only tests the form of the argument to see if it's a valid form. However, an argument can have valid form and still be

unsound. The conclusion can be false. You need to do two things before you can know a conclusion is true. You must use valid form, and you must have true premises. Valid form and true premises make a sound argument. If you have a sound argument, you know the conclusion is true.

You'll probably catch this fallacy:

If it rains outside, the ground will be dry.

The ground isn't dry. It's wet.

Therefore, it isn't raining outside.

This form of argument is called Modus Ponens. It's a valid form. Therefore, this logic is valid. However, the logic isn't sound. It doesn't make sense at all.

Here's the problem. The first premise isn't true. If it rains outside, the ground won't be dry. If it rains, the ground will be wet, not dry.

You may not catch this one:

If God is all-powerful and good, then He would not allow evil to exist.

Evil exists.

Therefore, either God is not all-powerful or God is not good.

This form of argument is also Modus Ponens. It's a valid form. Therefore, this logic has a valid form. However, the logic isn't sound. This piece of logic doesn't make sense.

What's the problem? The first premise isn't true. How does this persuader know God isn't willing to be patient with the problem of evil? Evil is a lack of goodness or lack of God in the same way darkness is the lack of light. Perhaps God wants a more glorious creation that has returned to Him willingly and not because of force or coercion. How does this persuader know anything about the nature of goodness or evil? God says at the end of the ages of the ages, everyone will understand God's wisdom.

Premises always make a truth claim. They claim something is true. When someone claims something is true, that's called "a truth claim." Often, people make claims based on authority. You need to ask, "What is the authority?" you need to ask, "What is the starting point for the claim?" you need to ask, "How do you know?"

When you ask these three questions and give them serious thought, you begin to realize the weakness of almost all reasoning used around you. If you make a truth claim, every premise statement must be true. The premise statements supposedly show the conclusion is true. Those premise statements must be true. As I've repeatedly emphasized, truth is absolute by definition. I've already explained the problem of proving each premise true. The premise is the proof, but you need proof of the proof. Every statement needs further proof unless God makes the statement. In other words, you find yourself in an infinite regression of unproven proofs unless God spoke to you. If you're going to prove anything, then you must base your reasoning on absolute premises. Can you state the premises clearly? Are the premises absolute truth? Do you have a way to know your premises are true? Teachers ignore this problem because the only way they can have true premises is by divine revelation. Without divine revelation, premises are axiomatic thinking fallacies. Now you understand why skeptics claim you can't even know you exist. And they claim you can't know a real world exists.

The only way to have sound reasoning is to listen to the voice of God as He reveals the truth to you. You need Jesus. You can't prove to another person that God speaks to you. If you speak by the Holy Spirit, the other person is hearing the voice of God through you. And if they seek God, God will speak the same thing to them. Ungodly thinkers are ungodly thinkers because they refuse to seek God and refuse to acknowledge God when they hear Him speak to them. Not even God can get through to them.

## **Agreeing on Premises**

Since ungodly thinkers have no path to true premises that prove conclusions, they often suggest an alternative to true premises. They couldn't prove any of their premises using godless thinking, so they invented a workaround. They decided it's enough if they agree on

premises. Two or more people can agree on certain premises. They pretend the premises are true because they agree on them. Agreeing doesn't prove the premises, and no one believes the premises have been proven. They just ignore that fact and continue as if the premises were proven. And then, they use unsound logic (logic without true premises) to reason to conclusions. Then, they become dogmatic about those conclusions. This is another part of why the world has gone crazy.

If you agree on the premises rather than proving the premises, you can have a conversation. You can use proper form in your logic all you like, but proper form can't make your premises true. You could prove you agree on the premises, but you can't prove the premises. You can't prove your conclusions are true. You can agree, but you would be agreeing to deceive yourself. Agreement isn't the same thing as truth.

As you can see, ungodly thinking is a terrible problem. It stumbles around aimlessly in a world of make-believe. Ungodly thinking is always irrational. That's a problem. Ungodly thinkers try to project their problem onto godly thinkers. However, godly thinking doesn't have that problem.

That concludes this section on the extreme limits of godless thinking. You're probably scratching your head the same way I did when God was showing me this problem. It's a serious problem. Almost everyone is ignoring it. Almost no one is aware of it. Now you know.

Let not mercy and truth forsake you; Bind them around  
your neck, Write them on the tablet of your heart, *And* so  
find favor and high esteem In the sight of God and man.  
**Trust in the LORD with all your heart, And lean  
not on your own understanding; In all your ways  
acknowledge Him, And He shall direct your paths.  
Do not be wise in your own eyes; Fear the LORD  
and depart from evil.** It will be health to your flesh,  
And strength to your bones. ~ Proverbs 3:3-8 *New King  
James Version*

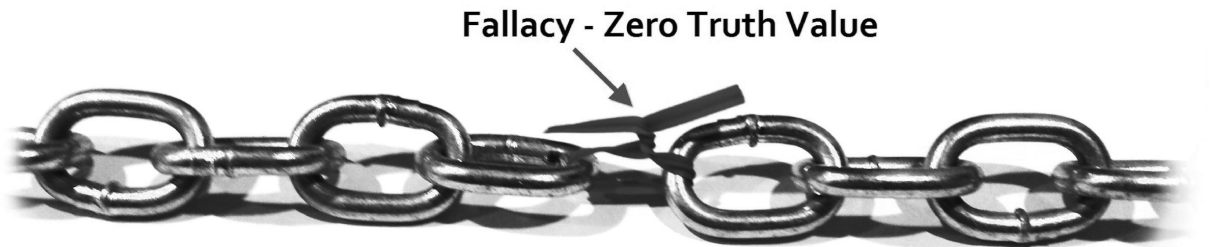
# Blurring the Line



Anything that blurs the line between reality and make-believe is a fallacy. Fallacies always make it harder to sort out the difference between truth and error.

I'll give a quick overview of fallacies here. However, *The Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies* gives much more detail. You can get it free here:

[http://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia\\_of\\_Logical\\_Fallacies\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia_of_Logical_Fallacies_-_Scientia.pdf)



**A chain of thought is only as strong as its weakest link.**

**Warning!** Memorizing many fallacies may give you a false sense of security, but it won't help you be rational. It won't help you detect irrationality. You can easily irritate other people by claiming they've committed one fallacy or another, but you won't be getting closer to truth.

All truth is hidden in Christ, and all who love truth listen to Christ. Enter into His presence with thanksgiving, honor, and praise. Remember that all who seek Jesus find Him. In Him, they find truth, knowledge, wisdom, understanding, and righteousness.

Sometimes, those who take the time to learn all about fallacies are worse off than if they hadn't known anything about fallacies. They have surface knowledge but don't understand. Here's an example.

**Rocky Rockbuilder:** Meeting the definition of a scientific theory requires rigor, but the molecules-to-humankind evolution story doesn't meet the test of a scientific theory.

**Sandy Sandbuilder:** The fact that you refer to Molecules-to-humankind evolution demonstrates that you lack of understanding of evolution.

**Rocky:** How so?

**Sandy:** Because molecules-to-humankind evolution isn't a field of study. Using a strawman argument undermines your position significantly because it's dishonest.

**Rocky:** Did I say molecules-to-humankind evolution is a field of study, or did I say it's a story?

Sandy falsely accused Rocky of committing a strawman argument, but Sandy committed a strawman fallacy. Rocky did not. Sandy implied Rocky had said molecules-to-humankind evolution is a field of study when Rocky said molecules-to-humankind evolution is a story. Is molecules-to-humankind evolution a field of study? Does anyone study the story that says molecules morphed into humans over millions of years?

Ungodly thinkers routinely accuse godly thinkers falsely of committing fallacies. They learned the names of many fallacies. However, they didn't learn to be rational.

## Defining Fallacies



Here are some shortened definitions of the word “fallacy” from the dictionaries:

Merriam-Webster

- A false or mistaken idea
- Erroneousness
- Deceptive appearance

#### American Heritage Dictionary

- A deceptive, misleading, or false notion, belief, etc.
- A misleading or unsound argument.
- Deceptive, misleading, or false nature; erroneousness.
- Logic. any of various types of erroneous reasoning that render arguments logically unsound.
- Obsolete. deception.

#### Collins English Dictionary

- An incorrect or misleading notion or opinion based on inaccurate facts or invalid reasoning
- Unsound or invalid reasoning
- The tendency to mislead
- An error in reasoning that renders an argument logically invalid

#### Lexico.com

- A mistaken belief, especially one based on unsound arguments
- A failure in reasoning which renders an argument invalid
- Faulty reasoning

## Categories



## Sir Francis Bacon's Four Idolas

Sir Francis Bacon divided fallacies into four categories, and you'll quote from *Real Faith & Reason Volume Two*

([https://RealReality.org/Real\\_Faith\\_and\\_Reason\\_Vol\\_2\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](https://RealReality.org/Real_Faith_and_Reason_Vol_2_-_Scientia.pdf))

for a description of those categories.

## ***Idola-Tribus Fallacy***

The desires of the innermost mind, the dullness and deception of the senses, and the interpretations of impressions become lenses that distort reality.

Worldviews are lenses that distort reality by acting as filters. These filters add to reality and subtract from reality. This distortion and filtering controls your interpretations whenever you observe or experience reality:

- Dullness and deception of the senses limit the impression.
- The desires of the innermost mind create bias.
- Bias acts as a powerful filter that adds to impressions and diminishes impressions.
- This filtration process directs the interpretation.
- The interpretation confirms the bias and fortifies the worldview.

With the idola-tribus category of fallacies, many problems work together to deceive you. Your senses aren't perfect. You have a worldview, and your worldview deceives you. Also, you have desires. Your inner desires deceive you. It happens to everyone. You could lose touch with reality because of the idola-tribus fallacy.

## ***Idola-Theatri Fallacy***

Concepts enter the mind through various sources and seem like reality.

Movies, TV dramas, and cartoons are three methods of implanting concepts through storytelling. Storytelling automatically creates a trance state. This trance state bypasses your inner filters and changes your worldview since it reduces your natural human resistance to change. Reality blends with make-believe in a trance. While you're in this trance state, persuaders implant lies into your worldview. With any story, even novels, you need to remember the author is working to influence you and change your worldview. The author wants to persuade you. You call the point of this persuasion "the theme of the

story.” Often, multiple themes work together. TV drama is the most powerful mind-molding method known because of the number of people it reaches and the number of hours people spend absorbing it. TV dramas also use music to draw you in. Music comes right behind storytelling in its ability to influence.

Do you not know that when you offer yourselves as obedient slaves, you are slaves to the one you obey, whether you are slaves to sin leading to death, or to obedience leading to righteousness? ~ *Romans 6:16*  
*Berean Study Bible*

Whenever you watch a show, you offer yourself to the show in obedience. You sit willingly to watch the show. You get into the show and experience the story.

Of course, a trance isn’t necessary to change a worldview, but rather, people build their worldviews from several sources. In children, these sources include the influence of parents, teachers, other children, video games, and animated cartoons. In adults, more sources become available. For instance, adults receive the impact of novels, non-fiction books, news media, or comedians. You can also allow classes, friends, museums, and many other powerful persuaders to brainwash you.

This confusion gets worse when several communication systems repeat the same propaganda message. These communication systems include textbooks, schools, universities, news broadcasts, social media, museums, parks, zoos, and entertainment. Plus, persuaders often state the concepts they push in assumptive language. It’s as if a single false prophet speaks with a single voice through all these sources, secretly inserting concepts into the worldviews of unsuspecting people. It’s a false-prophet-pseudo-education-pseudo-news-pseudo-analysis-pseudo-entertainment cabal. For instance, even now, teachers of Evolutionism are trying to find ways to make their stories seem more like reality by working on new more convincing presentations. Yes, they’re using tax money taken from Christian taxpayers to develop methods to deceive those Christian taxpayer’s children. With the many ways of programming you, if you yield yourself to them and willingly allow them to brainwash you, you become slave of those who indoctrinate you.

# ***Idola-Fori Fallacies***

Humans use names to confuse reality with make-believe.  
Two types of idola fori exist.

## ***Type 1 Idola Fori:***

Giving names to things that don't exist.

**Examples of names given to things no one has ever observed:**

- big bang
- dark matter
- dark energy
- evolution [meaning amoeba morphing into humans through a series of steps]
- abiogenesis
- claims of a 4.7-billion-year age of the earth
- Naturalism
- Materialism

The spacetime singularities lying at cores of black holes are among the known (or presumed) objects in the Universe about which the most profound mysteries remain and which our present-day theories are powerless to describe ~ Roger Penrose, *The Road To Reality*

That quote from Roger Penrose demonstrates the fallacy of giving names to things that don't exist. No one has ever seen a singularity. Singularities are fictional. This method of giving names to things that don't exist is very clever and tricky. Think about the way the human mind processes language. When someone names something that doesn't exist you form a concept of the non-existent entity just to process the thought. In other words, you create the non-existent entity in your worldview (inner fake-reality) as a way to understand the non-existent entity. At that point, the non-existent entity exists in

your mind. Idola fori is a hypnotic technique, but you don't realize the persuaders are hypnotizing you.

Henry Norman wrote a definition of what scientists have been calling "singularities." Singularities are examples of idola fori. Here's what Henry said:

In the context of cosmology, a "singularity" is a place in an equation where the result is unbounded or undefined. Consider the two cases, (1) The "big bang" and (2) A "Black Hole," both of which are conjectured to host a point of zero volume at the core (center of gravity), where all (most of?) its mass is concentrated. In the density equation:

$$\text{density} = \text{mass} / \text{volume}$$

A "singularity" appears when the "volume" of these "objects" goes to 0 (or by extrapolation "backward in time" of our apparently expanding Universe, when time comes to zero (at the "big bang")), causing division by zero, a mathematical operation which is not defined in algebra or arithmetic. Media and popular science have successfully turned these mathematical abstractions (singularities) into physical objects, by using statements like

"a singularity resides at the core of all black holes,"

or worse,

"a primordial singularity, a zero-volume point of infinite density and temperature and with enormous mass, appeared out of nowhere some 14 billion years ago, and rapidly expanded to become our Universe the Big Bang!"

Thus confusing a mathematical error with a conjectured object: In known physics, it is simply not possible to squeeze any amount of matter into "zero volume" (if

nothing else, witness the Pauli Exclusion Principle atoms (baryons) occupy a tiny but measurable volume and cannot be squeezed arbitrarily close together). We also see statements like “the big bang singularity is a point of zero volume, but very high mass, which makes the density infinite. This singularity contained all of the matter and energy in the Universe,” which is amusing. The commonly assumed but incorrect definition “ $m/0 = \infty$ ” is used only in “Real Projective Line” or “Riemann Sphere” sets in calculus. Nevertheless bowing to “the experts” in the following I use the term “singularity” (always within quotation marks (and under protest!))

Singularities are hard to understand. That’s because they make no sense. They’re part of an insane vision. Henry Noman realized the word “singularity” is something that makes no sense. It’s something that’s nothing. It doesn’t exist. And yet, it seems almost real since it has a name.

When a persuader makes a name for something, thinkers imagine the named thing exists even if it doesn’t exist. They mistake the named thing for part of reality even if it isn’t.

So you have a non-existent thing. A persuader gives it a name. Let’s use the example of “molecules-to-humanity evolution” as a named thing. The more persuaders define and adorn molecules-to-humanity evolution with fabricated details, the more real it seems. The persuaded people don’t realize it’s just a fabrication. Persuaders made it up. “It must be real if it has a name.” And to further enhance the illusion, persuaders often falsely connect these names to words like “science,” “evidence,” or “observation.” However, real science, evidence, and observation don’t prove the existence of nonexistent things. If people add unreality to their worldviews, unreality begins to seem real.

## ***Type 2 Idola Fori:***

Giving names to things that exist but are poorly defined.

### **Examples of poorly defined names:**

- science

- evidence
- reason
- faith
- Christian

Persuaders may apply names to things that don't fit the meaning of the name. For instance, you could define "science" as dogmatic sacred cow beliefs based on assumptions, concepts, ideas, abstractions, and made-up stories. You could define "evidence" as assumption-based interpretations of observations. You could define "reason" as rationalizations based on logical fallacies. You could define "faith" as a conceptual mental exercise. You could define "Christian" as people who don't know Christ and don't intend to submit to Him. Ungodly people sometimes call a Christ-follower "a religious person." They also call a person who does rituals but doesn't know Christ "a religious person." They might define "religion" as listening to Christ and yielding to Him. Then they define "religion" as doing activities that have nothing to do with the Spirit of Christ.

Ken Ham mentioned this fallacy, and although he didn't mention it by name, he gave an example.

And here's another problem that we've got. Not only has the word "science" been hijacked by secularists, I believe the word "evolution" has been hijacked by secularists. The word, "evolution," has been hijacked using what I call a bait and switch. Let me explain to you. The word "evolution" is being used in public school textbooks, and you often see it in documentaries and so on. It's used for observable changes which you would agree with, and then used for unobservable changes such as molecules-to-man.

~ Ken Ham, *The Nye-Ham Debate*

A word like "science" can be deceptive if it's defined too broadly because it keeps you from seeing the differences between distinct things. "Science" could mean made-up sacred-cow stories, or it could mean arbitrary assumptions. It could mean traditions, guessing, or a group-held paradigm. It could even mean experimentation, testing, and observation. Bill Nye gave "science" a broad definition that

includes all these. As a result, you can't know what Bill means when he uses the word "science." Bill's version of "science" could be reality, make-believe, or anything between the two.

Evolutionists commit a similar fallacy when they define "evolution" as "change over time." That implies there's no difference between observed changes and imagined changes. This definition is too broad because, with this definition, the word "evolution" can mean two different things. Is "evolution" the changes you can observe from generation to generation? Or is "evolution" a fanciful story about gradual changes happening over millions of years? Think about what the second definition would require? Complete coded information systems that create useful functions would have to pop into existence one after another. Coded information has never been observed forming on its own. Coded information systems have unique and functioning coded information. The code has to do something helpful. They also have ways to execute the code and maintain the code. A story about even one such event is fanciful. However, a story about this happening repeatedly over millions of years is insane. Evolutionists use the same word, "evolution" to mean two things. It means **observation** on the one hand and **make-believe** on the other. Persuaders create the same type of confusion using the word "science." Is "science" **testing and observation**? Or is "science" **make-believe**?

Idola fori is effective in creating distorted worldviews. Every form of media persuades and manipulates you by using both methods of idola fori. For instance, you see these methods in education, news, entertainment, museums, placards in parks, and advertising.

## ***Idola-Specus Fallacy***

### **The Fallacy of Inner Bias**

God says those who reject Christ love darkness and hate light.

And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. ~ *John 3:19 New King James Version*

They're biased toward darkness and biased against the light, and bias makes them resist truth and love error. The idola-specus fallacy resists truth because of inner bias, and it confuses reality and make-believe, causing resistance to truth and love for error.

it sounds as though you believe your world view, which is a literal interpretation of most parts of the Bible, is correct. Well, what became of all those people who never heard of it, never heard of you? What became of all those people in Asia? What became of all those First Nations people in North America? Were they condemned and doomed? ~ Bill Nye, *The Nye-Ham Debate*

Bill Nye was debating Ken Ham and contending against the account of Creation as it's written in the Bible. In context, Bill was reacting against the Gospel when he made this statement. And it was here that he exposed his bias. He exposed the reason He doesn't want God to exist or the Bible to be accurate. He could have asked, "What's to become of me?" Ungodly thinkers who resist the Gospel don't want to be in submission to God and don't want to do God's will because they don't want to be set free from sin. Rejection of Christ is never an intellectual problem, but it's always a spiritual problem. Lest someone think you can't know this truth to be a fact, you know this truth by divine revelation since God says it this way:

And this is the verdict: The Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness more than light, because their deeds were evil. For everyone practicing evil hates the Light and does not come to the Light, so that his works may not be exposed; But whoever practices the truth comes into the Light, so that it may be clearly seen that what he has done has been accomplished in God. ~ *John 3:19-21 Berean Study Bible*

Moses, David, Elijah, and Isaiah never heard what you would call "the gospel." And yet, they experienced forgiveness and power for righteousness. They accepted it and walked in it. That forgiveness and righteousness came through Christ. They responded to the Light. At the same time, millions turned away from the Light. Millions did what Bill Nye is doing. No one has any excuse.

Both Christians and unbelievers can love darkness rather than light. If unbelievers persist in unbelief, they enter into this darkness more. However, Christians become insensitive to the Holy Spirit and become spiritually blinded if they continue to do what God isn't leading them to do. Christians also become insensitive if they refuse to acknowledge God's moment-by-moment leading, teaching, and correcting. In other words, inner bias can keep a Christian from continuing to move forward in spiritual maturity.

Biased people don't feel biased. They feel right and justified and rational. That's because they're biased by their worldviews. Their worldviews seem like reality.

What happens in these cases? Those who follow their own inner biases stop their own progress. Their own minds, not other people's minds, cause their downfall. They become vain in their imaginations, and their foolish hearts darken, so God gives them over to impurity through the desires of their own hearts, and then they do impure things.

Therefore God gave them over in the desires of their hearts to impurity for the dishonoring of their bodies with one another. ~ *Romans 1:24 Berean Study Bible*

God gives them over to the disorder and torment of their own minds.

For this reason God gave them over to dishonorable passions. ~ *Romans 1:26a Berean Study Bible*

When people resist God, God allows them to be deceived and enslaved by their own reprobate minds.

Furthermore, since they did not see fit to acknowledge God, He gave them up to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. ~ *Romans 1:28 Berean Study Bible*

Believers and unbelievers alike walk into this darkness and bondage. If you refuse to listen to God and acknowledge God, your conscience become seared.

Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron ~ *1 Timothy 4:2 King James Version*

The link to the Source of all wisdom, knowledge, and understanding gets weak, the mind becomes impure and filled with many deceitful lies, and the conscience grows insensitive over time. So you see this insensitivity has a cause, and the cause is human unwillingness to acknowledge God when He leads, refusing to glorify Him as God, and refusing to be thankful to God. God tells you why some people don't want to acknowledge Him. They love unrighteousness and enjoy engaging in sin. They don't want God to expose that sin or to be in control of their lives.

When you think of unrighteousness or sin, you may think of a certain sin or a certain form of unrighteousness. However, God defines sin as straying from the Way, and that Way is Jesus Christ, so any thought or act not guided by the Holy Spirit is a sin. When you want to do your own will, you want to sin.

On the other hand, some people desire to know and obey God. They're thankful to Him, listen to His leading, and accept His corrections that conflict with their hardened false beliefs. They glorify Him and forgive those who hurt them without trying to get even. Of course, they also battle a fleshly nature that's contrary to God. Salvation overcomes this fleshly nature and sets you free from it. If you're redeemed, you're set free. While Christ completed the work on the cross, you allow Him to apply His work to your life, but He doesn't force you against your will. Rather, you allow Him to change you by believing and following Him as He gives you the power to believe Him, do His will, and follow Him. Your part is receiving this power.

And most of all, as I said to you, the Bible says if you come to God believing that He is, He'll reveal Himself to you. You'll know. If you search out the truth, you really want God to show you as you search out the silver and gold, He will show you. He will reveal Himself to you. ~ Ken Ham, *The Nye-Ham Debate*

This quote is the strongest point Ken made during the Nye-Ham debate as Ken is referring to divine revelation and talking about a relationship with Christ. However, inner bias (*idola specus*) is the reason that ungodly thinkers refuse to "come to God believing that He is." They don't want Him to "reveal Himself to" them. So they

won't receive Him but reject Him instead. They refuse to "search out the truth" because they don't want the truth but rather love a lie. And, as we've seen, this truth isn't just a Christian opinion or Ken's opinion, but it's how God explains it:

And this is the verdict: The Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness more than light, because their deeds were evil. Everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come into the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. But whoever practices the truth comes into the Light, so that it may be clearly seen that what he has done has been accomplished in God." ~ *John 3:19-21 Berean Study Bible*

Anyone can test what Ken described, but no ungodly thinker gives you a way you could prove any of their assumptions. Instead, you're just supposed to take their word for those assumptions, but mostly, they hide their assumptions from you using smokescreens to conceal the made-up stuff or to make made-up stuff seem real.

## **Worldviews**

Each of these categories of fallacies relates to worldviews in some way. Every person has an internal representation of the world around them. Some people call these internal worlds "worldviews." In Total Quality Management, they call them "paradigms." In communication theory, they're called "filters." You might call it "your viewpoint," "your view," "your perspective," "your reality," or "your truth." Worldviews are fake internal realities that seem real. They aren't real, but they seem real. That causes problems.

As Christians, we've said your enemies are the devil, the world, and your sinful flesh. When you say "the world," you often mean the culture and the culture's influence on your life. However, the most deadly world that you must overcome and defeat is the world that exists in your innermost mind. This world appears in you as a fake-reality that seem more real than real reality. It's a stronghold of Satan. It makes your mind deceitful and desperately wicked. It seems virtuous, but it is not. As Jesus said, "Only God is good." It filters your experiences and your observations more than you realize.

It's quite rare to find someone who sees the same world you see. ~ John Green, *Turtles All the Way Down*

I would disagree slightly with John Green. I would restate that this way.

It's quite rare to find someone who sees a world similar to the one you see, and no one sees the exact same world you see.

When George and Bill meet and have similar worldviews, they tend to get along. You say they have rapport. However, when Bill meets Jim who has a radically dissimilar worldview from Bill's worldview, Bill thinks Jim is crazy. Jim thinks Bill is weird. Both men are shocked. Clashing worldviews usually result in disgust and disbelief that anyone could be so stupid. Jim doesn't say, "I have a fake-reality, and I'm comparing my fake-reality to Bill's fake-reality." Jim assumes his own fake-reality is real-reality and Bill is weird. It's very difficult for you to challenge your own fake-reality. That's the work of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit challenges your fake-reality and mine.

The culture is constantly working to form your worldview. Persuaders want to convince you of many ideas and concepts, and they use every means at their disposal to do that. They want to set up strongholds in your mind.

## **Formal or Informal**

One popular way to classify fallacies is to categorize them as either fallacies of form or other fallacies. By "fallacies of form," I mean the form, or structure, of the logic isn't valid. Fallacies of form are called formal fallacies. The other fallacies are called informal fallacies. Many fallacies are both formal and informal. However, for each fallacy, the formal and informal versions may have different names.

The formal syllogistic fallacies are as follows:

- Affirmative Conclusion from a Negative Premise
- Negative Conclusion from Affirmative Premises
- Affirming the Consequent
- Denying the Antecedent

- Affirming the Antecedent
- Denying the Antecedent
- Affirming the Consequent
- Denying the Consequent
- Fallacy of Exclusive Premises
- Four-Term Fallacy
- Illicit Process Fallacy
- Illicit Major Fallacy
- Illicit Minor Fallacy
- Undistributed Middle Fallacy

These are covered in more depth in the chapter titled *Getting Formal* that deals with syllogisms. They're also covered in *The Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies*.

[https://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia\\_of\\_Logical\\_Fallacies\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](https://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia_of_Logical_Fallacies_-_Scientia.pdf)

Informal fallacies are many. Once you think you've named them all, Satan thinks up a new way to deceive. Here are some examples:

- Circular Reasoning Fallacy
- Outright Lie Fallacy
- Faulty Premise Fallacy
- Appeal To Popularity Fallacy
- Appeal To Coercion Fallacy
- Appeal To Fear Fallacy
- Appeal To Anger Fallacy

## **Axiomatic or Smokescreen**

I've gone over two ways of classifying fallacies. Another way to classify fallacies is axiomatic thinking fallacies versus smokescreen fallacies. This basic difference has been dealt with in other Scientia books, so I'll quote from *Real Faith & Reason Volume One* rather than re-writing.

You want to understand the basis of all fallacies. The simplicity of this understanding is that while hundreds of **fallacies** exist, they sort into these two kinds.

1. Axioms are claims without proof. They may be outright lies. They may be assumptions. They're always made-up stuff.
2. Smokescreen fallacies give the illusion that made-up stuff is real stuff.

And that's how simple it is. It's so simple that most people miss it. And yet, even though it's simple, fallacies can be tricky illusions. They must blur the division between reality and make-believe or the fallacies don't work.

Many fallacies fit the term "axiomatic-thinking fallacy." These fallacies are all axiomatic-thinking fallacies, but they're different from each other. Under the axiomatic-thinking fallacy, you'll find fallacies like the following:

- assumption
- blind authority
- bald-faced lie
- hypothesis contrary to fact
- ipse dixit
- lie
- misrepresenting facts
- outright lie
- the big lie technique

Under the smokescreen category of fallacy, you'll find things like the following:

- ambiguity
- appeal to authority
- appeal to emotion
- appeal to ridicule
- circular reasoning

- coercion
- comparison
- contradiction
- distraction
- fallacies of cause
- fallacies of choice
- fallacies of omission
- fallacies of pressure
- flawed evidence
- genetic fallacies
- infinite regression
- invalid form (formal fallacies)
- limiting presuppositions
- message control
- non sequitur
- statistical fallacies

As we've seen, ungodly thinkers always make up something and then use that made-up stuff as a foundation or starting point for their reasoning. That made-up stuff is the basis for their reasoning. And we've discovered that ungodly thinkers have to make up something to do any reasoning at all. Then they almost always hide the assumption, pretend it's not made-up stuff, or defend their habit of basing all thought on made-up stuff. As a result, ungodly thinking gets complex. And complex irrationality is difficult to evaluate. That's why ungodly thinkers use complexity and confusion to hide their axiomatic-thinking fallacies.

# Conclusions



Three reference sections follow this conclusion:

- *The Rules*
- *More Than You Wanted to Know About Syllogisms*
- *Definitions*
- *Further Study*

If you are a student of logic or epistemology, you'll find this book a handy reference text. You may even want to memorize the definitions, types of categorical statements, rules of logic, rules of categorical statements, rules of inference, and rules of sound logic. You can memorize the types of syllogisms and valid forms if you like.

Otherwise, these principles are worth reviewing. Sound reasoning must begin with truth and must not contain any made-up stuff. If you bring unsupported or assumptions into reasoning, you destroy rational thought. You may sense when that's happening. However, you can bring in assumptions without ever mentioning them. They're called hidden assumptions or presuppositions.

Here's what's most important. If you stand in the presence of the Holy Spirit, He will guide your reasoning. If you learn nothing else from this book, make sure you remember the following:

Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths. Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil. ~  
*Proverbs 3;5-7 King James Version*

The fallen human mind doesn't have a method or system to self-generate truth without observation or divine revelation. Observation is always interpreted. And you include reading or hearing Scripture

as part of observation. Scripture is always interpreted. You can't get outside yourself to observe objectively. No one can read Scripture without interpreting Scripture. Try as you might, your preconceptions, theologies, and worldviews impact your understanding of Scripture and all your observations. And only the Holy Spirit can overcome that natural weakness.

Sound reasoning must begin with truth. If you want to know the truth, you must submit to the Source of all truth. His name is Jesus Christ. You must be willing to submit to Him.

Knowing the truth with absolute certainty requires a chain of thought that has no weakness. A chain of thought is as strong as its weakest link. Divine revelation comes from the Almighty God and has absolute strength. Assumptions have no strength.

The human mind is deceitful and desperately wicked. When you accept Christ as your Savior, you don't automatically have a completely changed mind that knows all things and is always on the right side of truth. You need the Holy Spirit to lead you into all truth.

You do have experiences. You perceive and observe, but to think beyond what you observe requires truth. And you can only find the truth in Christ. Christ is real and knowable. You know Christ exists because you know Him. Whoever sincerely seeks Christ receives Christ, and Christ reveals truth. Whoever is on the side of truth listens to Jesus Christ.

Since Christ speaks through the Bible and every means of divine revelation in the Bible, you must remember that divine revelation never conflicts with the Bible. God doesn't argue against Himself. You know the Bible is true because the Holy Spirit reveals the Bible is true and reliable. You have no other way you can know you can trust the Bible with absolute certainty. Every argument against the Bible bases itself on made-up stuff. Those who argue against the God of the Bible always base their arguments on made-up stuff. If you hear an argument against the Bible or the God of the Bible, look for the made-up stuff. It's there. Never be afraid to ask a skeptic how they think they know. Don't be afraid of what you might hear. If you can get to the root of their thinking, you'll find made-up stuff.

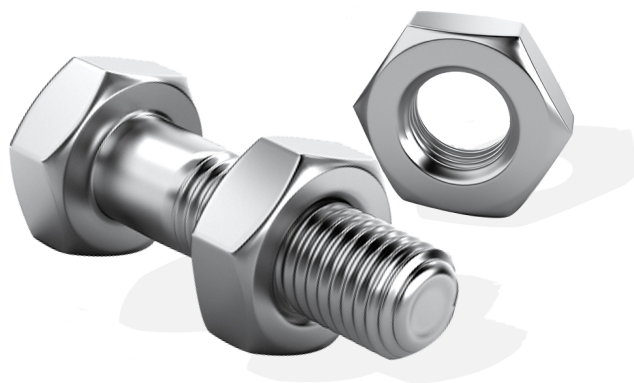
Without Christ, the human mind has no recourse other than to base reasoning on made-up stuff for reason. Any made-up stuff that's added to reason results in irrational thinking. You'll find irrational thinking by far the most common thinking. All reasoning is based on either divine revelation or made-up stuff. You base your reasoning on either divine revelation or made-up stuff. No exceptions exist.

Therefore, you can't reason beyond what you see or experience without either being irrational or receiving truth from Christ. Christ guides, teaches, and corrects all who follow Him.

Many Christians walk in faith without understanding the nature of faith. They walk in the grace of God and the hope of God without understanding grace and hope. You can have God's blessings without understanding them. And yet, it's better to understand. And even when you do understand them, you find out God continues to reveal deeper depths of His glory as you continue to yield to His Spirit.

Faith isn't making believe. Rather, it comes by listening to Christ's voice. Jesus Christ is the author and finisher of your faith. You can't work up faith. Instead, faith only comes by hearing and hearing by the utterance of God. In other words, God must lead, teach, or correct you for you to have real faith. You must listen and acknowledge Him. Then faith comes.

Faith gives you access to God's grace. Grace isn't just forgiveness. Grace is power for righteousness. By grace, God does His works through you. By the Holy Ghost, the love of God shines out through you and motivates and empowers your thoughts, words, and deeds. That's the way the Holy Spirit transfigures you from glory to glory into the image of Christ, which is spiritual maturity. Each time you submit, the flesh dies in the Light of Christ as the Holy Spirit is forming Christ within you. God is working toward a goal. You see the manifestation of the sons of God on the horizon. You are approaching the redemption of your body. We will all come into unity as one totally mature man. We will come to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ together.



# REFERENCE

- *The Rules*
- *More Than You Wanted to Know About Syllogisms*
- *Definitions*
- *Further Study*

## The Rules



## Three Rules of Logic



The Law of Identity: S is S.

The Law of Noncontradiction: S is not non-S.

The Law of the Excluded Middle: Either S or non-S.

Those three laws may seem to be too obvious. And yet, many of the ways people deceive you just break one or more of these three laws.

## The Law of Identity

It is impossible that any given thing isn't itself.

Each person, place, or thing is the same as itself.

Examples:

God is God.

America is America

## **The Law of Noncontradiction**

No person, place, or thing can both exist and not exist at the same time and in the same way.

No statement can be both true and false at the same time and in the same way.

Examples:

God is not non-God.

America is not non-America.

## **The Law of the Excluded Middle**

Any person, place, or thing either exists or doesn't exist.

Any statement is either true or false.

Examples:

Either God or no-God but not both.

Either America or no-America but not both.

## **Requirements for Sound Logic**



1. The premise must be true.
2. The three rules of logic must be followed.
  1. The Law of Identity.

2. The Law of Noncontradiction
3. The Law of the Excluded Middle
3. The form must be valid.

# More Than You Wanted to Know About Syllogisms



I've tried to make this section complete. It's more of a resource than something you would read. If you're taking a logic class, you may find this is an additional source of information. I've also included a comprehensive glossary of definitions.

## **Definition of syllogism from Merriam Webster**

- 1 : a deductive scheme of a formal argument consisting of a major and a minor premise and a conclusion (as in "every virtue is laudable; kindness is a virtue; therefore kindness is laudable")
- 2 : a subtle, specious, or crafty argument
- 3 : deductive reasoning

## **Definition of Deductive Method from Merriam Webster**

: a method of reasoning by which (1) concrete applications or consequences are deduced from general principles or (2) theorems are deduced from definitions and postulates

## **Definition of Deduction from Merriam Webster**

a : the deriving of a conclusion by reasoning based on intuition rather than deduction specifically : inference in which the conclusion about particulars follows necessarily from general or universal premises (see premise entry 1 sense 1) — compare induction

b : a conclusion reached by logical deduction

## Definition of Conclusion from Merriam Webster

a : a reasoned judgment : inference The obvious conclusion is that she was negligent.

b : the necessary consequence of two or more propositions taken as premises especially : the inferred proposition of a syllogism

Three basic types of reasoning exist. These are deductive, inductive, and abductive. Syllogisms apply to deductive reasoning.

## Nobody Talks that Way



Almost no one writes or talks in syllogisms. Can you imagine a normal conversation where you use modus ponens? You say, “If A then B. A. Therefore B.” That would be the shorthand for the form, but you would say it like this:

If God reveals Himself to me, then I know God exists.

God reveals Himself to me.

Therefore, I know God exists.

Most of us don’t go through all that. You might say it like this:

I know God exists since He reveals Himself to me.

You can restate any reasoning in the form of a syllogism. But, as the title of this section suggests, nobody talks that way.

You use syllogisms more like you diagram sentences. When you speak, you don’t diagram your sentences. When you read a book, you don’t usually diagram the sentences in the book. You diagram the sentences to analyze the grammar. You state logic as syllogisms to analyze the logic. Diagramming a sentence analyzes the grammar of the sentence. Stating a claim as a syllogism analyzes the logic of the claim.

Most people just state their conclusions, which leaves you guessing whether they have even bothered with thinking things through logically. They have rarely thought things through. They can be

dogmatic about their conclusions even though they haven't thought them through. If you ask them how they know, they may feel threatened, but it's still a great question to ask.

However, it's possible to give good reasons for what you believe without speaking in syllogisms. A good reason must meet the following two requirements:

1. **It must be true.**
2. **It must prove the conclusion.**

## Types of Syllogisms



1. **Categorical syllogisms:** A conclusion follows from a general statement (the major premise) and a specific statement (the minor premise).
2. **Hypothetical syllogisms:**
  1. Conditional Syllogism: If P, then Q. Q. Therefore, P.
  2. Disjunctive Syllogism: either... or. Either P or Q. Not Q. Therefore, P. (That's only valid if both P and Q is not an option. If both P and Q are possible, then we've committed the fallacy of affirming one alternate, though the form may seem valid.)
  3. Conjunctive Syllogism: both...and. Both P and Q are true. Therefore, P is true. Therefore, Q is true.
3. **Dilemma:** Two hypothetical syllogisms plus a disjunction. (If P, then Q) and (If R, then S). P or R. Therefore Q or S.
4. **Sorites:** A series of premises (incomplete syllogisms) where the predicate of each incomplete syllogism's premise is the subject of the next. The conclusion consists of the subject of the first premise joined with the predicate of the last premise. All A is B; All B is C; All C is D; All D is E; Therefore, all A is E.

5. **Perfect Syllogisms:** Self-evidently or obviously valid syllogisms. Perfect syllogisms are syllogisms where the conclusion obviously follows from the premises. That doesn't mean the premises are true, the conclusion is true, or the argument is sound.
6. **Epichere:** A syllogism in which proof is joined to one or both premises. The proof is often expressed by a causal clause. The premise to which a proof is annexed is an enthymeme.
7. **Enthymeme:** An abbreviated categorical syllogism. One of its premises and/or its conclusion is not expressed.

Syllogisms attempt to break complex reasoning into simpler more basic reasoning. They attempt to think a problem through logically step by step from one premise to another to arrive at a true conclusion or explanation. How would that be possible without revelation? Without revelation, you have no path to a true premise. Without true premises, no reasoning is sound.

## Categorical Syllogisms



- Categorical Syllogisms are deductive and contain two premise statements plus one, and only one, conclusion statement.
- Each part of the syllogism is a categorical proposition.
- Each categorical proposition contains two categorical terms.
- Each of the premises (proof statements), where “S” is the subject term and “P” is the predicate term, is in one of the following forms:
  - “All S are P.” (Universal Affirmatives)
  - “Some S are P” (Particular Affirmatives)

- “No S are P” (Universal Negatives)
- “Some S are not P” (Particular Denials)

A proposition is a statement that's part of a syllogism. Some statements aren't part of a syllogism, and those statements aren't propositions. A proposition has two terms. One term is the subject. The other is the predicate.

## Four Types of Categorical Statements

Syllogisms consist of propositions. Propositions consist of two terms, the subject and the predicate. These two terms are connected by one of four connecting terms as follows:

- is
- is not
- are
- are not

One who follows Christ is a Christ-follower.

subject
Connecting term
predicate

One who doesn't follow Christ is not a Christ-follower.

subject
Connecting term
predicate

Those who follow Christ are Christ-followers.

subject
Connecting term
predicate

Those who don't follow Christ are not Christ-followers.

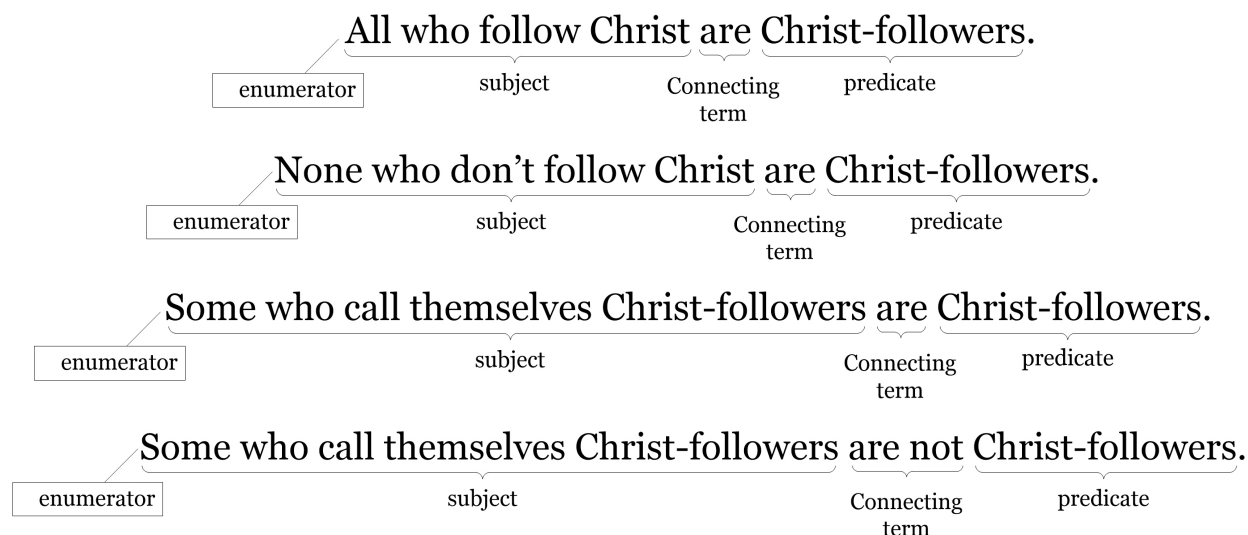
subject
Connecting term
predicate

The subject can be any of three enumerators as follows:

- all
- no
- some

As a result, there are four types of categorical statements as follows:

- All S is P
- No S is P
- Some S is P
- Some S is not P



## Six Rules for Valid Categorical Syllogisms

If a categorical syllogism violates even one of these rules, it's not valid.

1. There must be exactly three terms all used in the same sense.
2. The middle term must be distributed in at least one premise.
3. If either a major or minor term is distributed in the conclusion, it must be distributed in the premises.
4. It can't have two negative premises.
5. If either premise is negative, then the conclusion must be negative.
6. Two universal premises cannot be used to reach a true conclusion.

(The terms used in these six rules are defined in the *Definitions* section in the back of this book.)

**Example:**

All who follow Christ are led by Christ.

I follow Christ.

Therefore, I am led by Christ.

**Conversions—Rules for reversal of subject and predicate:**

- Universal Negatives: If it is true that no A is B, then it will also be true no B is A. If it is true no humans are righteous, then it will also be true no righteousness is human-generated.
- Universal Affirmatives: If all A is B, then some B is A. (If all B is A, then some B is A.) If all wisdom and knowledge are hidden in Christ, then some wisdom and knowledge are hidden in Christ.
- Particular Affirmatives: If some B is A, then some A is B. If some Christians follow Christ, then some who follow Christ are Christians.
- Particular Denials: subject and predicate cannot be reversed.

***Each premise has one term in common with the conclusion:***

- In a major premise (the general statement), you call this common term the “major term,” and it functions as the predicate of the conclusion.
- in a minor premise (the specific statement), you call this common term the “minor term,” and it functions as the subject of the conclusion

Major premise: All M are P. (P is the major term)

Minor premise: All S are M. (S is the major term)

Conclusion: All S are P.

***The conclusions “All P are S” or all “All P are M” would be fallacious and invalid form.***

Major premise: All M are P.

Minor premise: All S are M.

Conclusion: All S are P.

M = middle, S = subject, P = predicate.

Major premise: All humans need Christ.

Minor premise: I'm a human.

Conclusion: Therefore, I need Christ.

Human/humans = middle, I = subject, need Christ = predicate.

## **Mood**

Each syllogism has a mood.

You note the mood of a syllogism in three letters, one letter for each statement. The three statements are the major premise statement, minor premise statement, and conclusion statement. You note each sentence type with a letter: A (all), E (no), I (some), or O (some not).

A = All X are Y

E = No X are Y

I = Some X are Y

O = Some X are not Y

OAo has an O proposition as its major premise, an A proposition as its minor premise, and another O proposition as its conclusion

Major Premise (O): X does not belong to some Y

Minor Premise (A): X belongs to every Y

Conclusion (O): X does not belong to some Y

EIO syllogism has an E major premise, I minor premise, and O conclusion.

Major Premise (E): X belongs to no Y

Minor Premise (I): X belongs to some Y

Conclusion (O): X does not belong to some Y

## **Symbols**

a = belongs to every

e = belongs to no

i = belongs to some

o = does not belong to some

## **Abbreviations for categorical sentences:**

AaB = A belongs to every B (Every B is A)

AeB = A belongs to no B (No B is A)

AiB = A belongs to some B (Some B is A)

AoB = A does not belong to some B (Some B is not-A)

## **Figure**

The figure is solely determined by the position in which its middle term appears in the two premises.

The figure can be 1, 2, 3, or 4:

1: subject in the major premise and predicate in the minor premise.

2: predicate in the major premise and predicate in the minor premise.

3: subject in the major premise and subject in the minor premise.

4: predicate in the major premise and subject in the minor premise.

The 4 figures of syllogistic arguments for each mood:

1-(mp)(sm)(sp)

2-(pm)(sm)(sp)

3-(mp)(ms)(sp)

4-(pm)(ms)(sp)

## Valid Forms

Depending on how you count them, 512 or 256 logically distinct types of syllogisms exist. Only twenty-four types are valid. Of the twenty-four valid forms, fifteen are unconditionally valid, and nine are conditionally valid.

## *Perfect Syllogisms*

Perfect syllogisms are self-evidently valid. Perfect syllogisms are obviously valid. The conclusion follows from the premises in perfect syllogisms. The premises must still be true. This **doesn't** mean the premises are true, the conclusion is true, or the argument is sound since form doesn't test for true premises.

The perfect syllogisms **aren't** provable. Aristotelian logic takes them as axioms. Aristotle used these axioms to “prove” the imperfect syllogisms using conversion. He “demonstrated” the imperfect syllogisms to be valid. Usually, he reduced the imperfect syllogism to one of the perfect syllogisms.

Aristotle said Barbara, Celarent, Darii, and Ferio are the perfect syllogisms.

Barbara / AAA-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

All M are P.

All S are M.

Therefore, All S are P.

That's the only valid form of syllogism where conclusions are universal affirmative propositions.

All Christ-followers obey Christ as He speaks.  
All who love Christ are Christ-followers.  
Therefore, all who love Christ obey Christ as He speaks.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
All cherry popsicles are popsicles.  
Therefore, all cherry popsicles are frozen treats.  
Celarent / EAE-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

No M are P.  
All S are M.  
Therefore, No S are P.

No sin is from God.  
All distortions of marriage are sin.  
Therefore, no distortions of marriage are from God.

No popsicles are cars.  
All cherry popsicles are popsicles.  
Therefore, no cherry popsicles are cars.  
Darii / AII-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

All M are P.  
Some S are M.  
Therefore, Some S are P.

Whatever is not of faith is sin.  
Some of your words and actions are not of faith.  
Therefore, some of your words and actions are sin.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
Some goodies are popsicles.  
Therefore, some goodies are frozen treats.  
Ferio / EIO-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

No M are P.  
Some S are M.  
Therefore, Some S are not P.

No unfaithful people are walking in the Spirit.  
Some who call themselves “Christian” are unfaithful.  
Therefore, some who call themselves “Christian” are not walking in the Spirit.

No popsicles are cars.  
Some treats are popsicles.  
Therefore, some treats are not cars.

### ***Fifteen Unconditionally Valid Forms:***

Barbara / AAA-1(mp)(sm)(sp)  
(Perfect Syllogism)

All M are P.  
All S are M.  
Therefore, all S are P.

That’s the only valid form of syllogism where conclusions are universal affirmative propositions.

All Christ-followers obey Christ as He speaks.  
All who love Christ are Christ-followers.  
Therefore, all who love Christ obey Christ as He speaks.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
All cherry popsicles are popsicles.  
Therefore, all cherry popsicles are frozen treats.

Baroco / AOO-2(pm)(sm)(sp)

All P are M.  
Some S are not M.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

All wisdom is hidden in Christ.  
Some things that are called “wisdom” are not hidden in Christ.  
Therefore, Some things that are called “wisdom are not wisdom.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
Some treats are not frozen treats.

Therefore, some treats are not popsicles.  
Bocardo / OAO-3(mp)(ms)(sp)

Some M are not P.  
All M are S.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

Some premises are not true.  
All premises are claims.  
Therefore, some claims are not true.

Some treats are not frozen.  
All treats are yummy.  
Therefore, some yummy things are not frozen.  
Camenes / AEE-4(pm)(ms)(sp)

All P are M.  
No M are S.  
Therefore, no S are P.

All truth is absolute.  
No absolutes are tentative.  
Therefore, nothing tentative is truth.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
No frozen treats are cars.  
Therefore, no cars are popsicles.  
Camestres / AEE-2(pm)(sm)(sp)

All P are M.  
No S are M.  
Therefore, no S are P.

All knowledge is revealed by God.  
No speculations are revealed by God.  
Therefore, no speculations are knowledge.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
No cars are frozen treats.  
Therefore, no cars are popsicles.  
Celarent / EAE-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

(Perfect Syllogism)

No M are P.  
All S are M.  
Therefore, no S are P.

No sin is from love.  
All distortions of marriage are sin.  
Therefore, no distortions of marriage are from love.

No popsicles are cars.  
All cherry popsicles are popsicles.  
Therefore, no cherry popsicles are cars.  
Cesare / EAE-2(pm)(sm)(sp)

No P are M.  
All S are M.  
Therefore, No S are P.

No bare claims are from God.  
All knowledge is from God.  
Therefore, no knowledge is a bare claim.

No popsicles are vehicles.  
All cars are vehicles.  
Therefore, no cars are popsicles.  
Darii / AII-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

(Perfect Syllogism)

All M are P.  
Some S are M.  
Therefore, some S are P.

Whatever is not of faith is sin.  
Some of your words and actions are not of faith.  
Therefore, some of your words and actions are sin.

All popsicles are frozen treats.  
Some goodies are popsicles.  
Therefore, some goodies are frozen treats.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Datisi / AII-3(mp)(ms)(sp)

All M are P.

Some M are S.

Therefore, some S are P.

All who are chosen are called.

Some who are chosen are unfaithful.

Therefore, some who are unfaithful are called.

All popsicles are frozen treats.

Some popsicles are cherry-flavored treats.

Therefore, some cherry-flavored treats are frozen treats

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Disamis / IAI-3(mp)(ms)(sp)

Some M are P.

All M are S.

Therefore, some S are P.

Some who hear God’s voice obey God.

All who hear God’s voice are responsible.

Therefore, some who are responsible obey God.

Some popsicles are cherry-flavored treats.

All popsicles are frozen treats.

Therefore, some frozen treats are cherry-flavored treats.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Dimaris / IAI-4(pm)(ms)(sp)

Some P are M.

All M are S.

Therefore, some S are P.

Some who are disobedient blame others for their disobedience.

All who blame others for their disobedience are foolish.  
Therefore, some who are foolish are disobedient.

Some popsicles are cherry-flavored treats.  
All cherry-flavored treats are frozen treats.  
Therefore, some frozen treats are popsicles.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Ferio / EIO-1(mp)(sm)(sp)  
(Perfect Syllogism)

No M are P.  
Some S are M.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

No unfaithful people are walking in the Spirit.  
Some who call themselves “Christian” are unfaithful.  
Therefore, some who call themselves “Christian” are not walking in the Spirit.

No popsicles are cars.  
Some treats are popsicles.  
Therefore, some treats are not cars.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Festino / EIO-2(pm)(sm)(sp)

No P are M.  
Some S are M.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

No one who is walking in the Spirit is an unfaithful person.  
Some who call themselves “Christian” are unfaithful.  
Therefore, some who call themselves “Christian are not walking in the Spirit.

No popsicles are cars.  
Some vehicles are cars.

Therefore, some vehicles are not popsicles.  
("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove  
"some" and cannot prove "all.")

Fresison / EIO-4(pm)(ms)(sp)

No P are M.  
Some M are S.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

No Scripture is false.  
Some falsehoods are interpretations of Scripture.  
Therefore, some interpretations of Scripture are not  
Scripture.

No popsicles are vehicles.  
Some vehicles are cars.  
Therefore, some cars are not popsicles.  
("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove  
"some" and cannot prove "all.")

Ferison / EIO-3(mp)(ms)(sp)

No M are P.  
Some M are S.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

No Christians are perfect.  
Some Christians are troubled.  
Therefore, some troubled people are not perfect.

No popsicles are vehicles.  
Some popsicles are small treats.  
Therefore, some small treats are not vehicles.  
("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove  
"some" and cannot prove "all.")

***Valid only if S exists:***

Barbari / AAI-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

All M are P.

All S are M.  
Therefore, some S are P.

All who seek Christ find Christ.  
All who love truth seek Christ.  
Therefore, some who love truth find Christ.

All popsicles are cold treats.  
All cherry popsicles are popsicles.  
Therefore, some cherry popsicles are cold treats.  
("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove  
"some" and cannot prove "all.")

Celaront / EAO-1(mp)(sm)(sp)

No M are P.  
All S are M.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

No one who sincerely and persistently seeks Christ will  
fail to find Him.  
All who God foreknew will sincerely and persistently seek  
Christ.  
Therefore, some who God foreknew will not fail to find  
Him.

No vehicles are popsicles.  
All cars are vehicles.  
Therefore, some cars are not popsicles.  
("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove  
"some" and cannot prove "all.")

Camestros / AEO-2(pm)(sm)(sp)

All P are M.  
No S are M.  
Therefore, some S are not P.

All who follow Christ are led by Christ.  
None who refuse to follow Christ are led by Christ.

Therefore, some who refuse to follow Christ do not follow Christ.

All cars are vehicles.

No popsicles are vehicles.

Therefore, some popsicles are not cars.

("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove "some" and cannot prove "all.")

Cesaro / EAO-2(pm)(sm)(sp)

No M are P.

All S are M.

Therefore, some S are not P.

No one who sincerely seeks to know Christ is turned away.

All who love truth sincerely seek to know Christ.

Therefore, some who love truth are not turned away.

No popsicles are cars.

All cherry popsicles are popsicles.

Therefore, some cherry popsicles are not cars.

("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove "some" and cannot prove "all.")

Calemos / AEO-4(pm)(ms)(sp)

All P are M.

No M are S.

Therefore, some S are not P.

All Scripture is true.

No truth is questionable.

Therefore, some of what is questionable is not Scripture.

All cars are vehicles.

No vehicles are popsicles.

Therefore, some popsicles are not cars.

("Some" means "some or all." However, this form can only prove "some" and cannot prove "all.")

## ***Valid only if M exists:***

Darapti / AAI-3(mp)(ms)(sp)

All M are P.

All M are S.

Therefore, some S are P.

All who follow Jesus will suffer in the flesh.

All who follow Jesus are blessed.

Therefore, some of those who are blessed will suffer in the flesh.

All cars are vehicles.

All cars are transport devices.

Therefore, some transport devices are vehicles.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Felapton / EAO-3(mp)(ms)(sp)

No M are P.

All M are S.

Therefore, some S are not P.

None who know Jesus are lost.

All who know Jesus are born again.

Therefore, some who are born again are not lost.

No popsicles are cars.

All popsicles are frozen treats.

Therefore, some frozen treats are not cars.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

Fesapo / EAO-4(pm)(ms)(sp)

No P are M.

All M are S.

Therefore, some S are not P.

None who are lost know Jesus.

All who know Jesus are born again.  
Therefore, some who are born again are not lost.

No cars are popsicles.  
All popsicles are frozen treats.  
Therefore, some frozen treats are not cars.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

### ***Valid only if P exists:***

Bamalip / AAI-4(pm)(ms)(sp)

All P are M.  
All M are S.  
Therefore, some S are P.

All who walk in the Spirit yield themselves to the righteousness of God.  
All who yield themselves to the righteousness of God go from glory to glory.  
Therefore, some who go from glory to glory walk in the Spirit.

All cars are vehicles.  
All vehicles are means of transportation.  
Therefore, some means of transportation are cars.

(“Some” means “some or all.” However, this form can only prove “some” and cannot prove “all.”)

### **Formal Syllogistic Fallacies**

Under this heading, you have a list of eight syllogistic fallacies. You can look up their definitions in the *Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies*.

- Affirmative Conclusion from a Negative Premise
- Negative Conclusion from Affirmative Premises
- Fallacy of Exclusive Premises
- Four-Term Fallacy

- Illicit Process Fallacy
- Illicit Major Fallacy
- Illicit Minor Fallacy
- Undistributed Middle Fallacy

## Hypothetical Syllogisms



### Kinds of Hypothetical Syllogism:

- Conditional Syllogism (“If..., then...”)
- Disjunctive Syllogism (“Either..., or...”)
- Conjunctive Syllogism (“Not both..., and...”)

### Mixed Hypothetical Syllogisms:

- One premise is conditional.
- One premise affirms or denies either the antecedent or consequent of that conditional statement.

### Four Forms of Mixed Hypothetical Syllogisms:

#### *Valid forms:*

(AA) Affirming the Antecedent or Modus Ponens (valid)

If A, then B.

A.

Therefore, B.

If God leads me, then God is real.

God leads me.

Therefore, God is real.

(DC) Denying the Consequent or Modus Tollens (valid)

If A, then B.

Not B.  
Therefore, Not A.

If God didn't reveal the earth is billions of years old, then I  
can't know the earth is billions of years old.  
God didn't reveal the earth is billions of years old.  
Therefore, I can't know the earth is billions of years old.

Modus ponens

If A, then B  
A  
Therefore, B

If God leads me, then God exists.  
God leads me.  
Therefore, God exists.

Modus Tollens

If A, then necessarily B (it demands that B is necessarily  
true if A is true.)  
Not B  
Therefore, not-A

If there is no God, then He wouldn't lead me.  
It's not true that He doesn't lead me. (He does lead me.)  
Therefore, claims that God's non-existence are false.

Hypothetical syllogism

If A, then B  
If B, then C  
Therefore, if A, then C

If God leads me, then God exists.  
If God exists, then all arguments against God are false.  
Therefore, if God leads me, then all arguments against  
God are false.

Disjunctive syllogism

A or B (A or B must be the only choices.)  
Not A  
Therefore, B

Either The Bible is false or the Bible is true.  
God reveals the Bible is not false.  
Therefore, the Bible is true.  
Constructive dilemma

A or B  
If A then C  
If B then D  
Therefore C or D

Either you'll walk in the Spirit or you won't walk in the Spirit.  
If you walk in the Spirit, then you'll be changed into the image of Christ from glory to glory.  
If you don't walk in the Spirit, then you'll become more sinful and fleshly over time.  
Therefore, you'll be changed into the image of Christ from glory to glory or else you'll become more sinful and fleshly over time.

### ***Invalid forms or pretenders:***

(AC) Affirming the Consequent (invalid)

If A, then B.  
B.  
Therefore, A.

(DA) Denying the Antecedent (invalid)

If A, then B.  
Not A.  
Therefore, Not B.

You can perhaps see why these forms are valid or invalid by considering a simple example. Think of the following four syllogisms:

1. Affirming the Antecedent (AA)

If Fido is a dog, then Fido barks.  
Fido is a dog.  
Therefore, Fido barks

2. Denying the Antecedent (DA)

If Fido is a dog, then Fido barks.  
Fido is not a dog.

- Therefore, Fido doesn't bark.
3. Affirming the Consequent (AC)
- If Fido is a dog, then Fido barks.  
Fido barks.  
Therefore, Fido is a dog.
4. Denying the Consequent (DC)
- If Fido is a dog, then Fido barks.  
Fido doesn't bark.  
Therefore, Fido is not a dog.

## Conditional Syllogisms



Conditional syllogisms have a conditional statement as their major premise.

Two types of conditional syllogisms:

1. Mixed Conditional (the minor premise is a categorical proposition)
2. Purely Conditional (both of whose premises are conditional propositions)

Conditional syllogisms have a major premise, a minor premise, and a conclusion. However, conditional syllogisms often don't complete all three sentences. Sometimes thinkers only state the major and minor premises. Sometimes they state only the major premise. When they state only the major premise, they imply the conclusion. They use innuendo. They let the members of the audience infer for themselves. Inference is concluding and doesn't imply sound logic, and unsound logic may draw untrue conclusions.

An antecedent is a statement. The antecedent leads to the consequent. The consequent follows from the antecedent. The "if clause" is the antecedent. The "then clause" is the consequent.

### Mixed Conditional

***Affirm antecedent; then affirm consequent  
(valid)***

If A, then B.

And A; therefore B.

***Deny consequent; then deny antecedent  
(valid)***

If A, then B

But not-B; therefore not-A

***Purely Conditional***

If A is a B, then C is a D;

but if X is a Y, then A is a B;

therefore, if X is a Y, then C is a D.

**Invalid Forms and their Respective Fallacies**

***Fallacy of Affirming the Consequent (not  
valid: ACq)***

If A, then B

And B; therefore A

***Fallacy of Denying the Antecedent (not valid:  
DA)***

If A, then B

Not A; therefore not-B

**Disjunctive Syllogisms**



The disjunctive syllogism presents two alternatives. It states “either this or that.” You assume one alternative is necessarily true. Therefore, if you deny one, the other is the only possibility. A disjunct is something detached and distinct from something else. You’re creating an either-this-or-that-but-not-both relationship. You

call the two possibilities “disjuncts.” You state the two disjuncts in the major premise. You deny one possibility in the minor premise. You affirm the other possibility in the conclusion.

## **Denying the first disjunct and affirming the second (valid)**

Either A or B  
Not A; therefore B

## **Denying the second disjunct and affirming the first (valid)**

Either A or B  
Not B; therefore A

If you use a disjunctive syllogism, you must prove A and B are mutually exclusive. You must prove those are the only two choices, one is false, and one true. Many times, the form is valid, but the logic fails in a false premise or a premise based on nothing of substance.

## **Fallacy of Affirming a Disjunct (AD):**

A possible fallacy is first affirming one disjunct and then denying the other. That’s known as affirming the disjunct:

## **Affirming the Disjunct (not valid: AD)**

Either A or B  
And A; therefore not-B

Either A or B  
And B; therefore not-A

## **Conjunctive Syllogisms**



You propose two options in the major premise. You could call the options “propositions.” In this case, you call these options “conjuncts.” Conjuncts conflict with each other. Both conjuncts can’t

be true in the same way at the same time. You affirm the true conjunct in the minor premise. You say it's true. You deny the false conjunct in the conclusion. You say it's false. The valid form is:

A cannot be both B and C  
A is B; therefore A is not C  
(Affirm the first conjunct; deny the second)

A cannot be both B and C  
A is C; therefore A is not-B  
(Affirm the second conjunct; deny the first)

Bill cannot be both a follower of Christ and a non-follower of Christ.  
Bill is following Christ; Therefore, Bill is not a non-follower of Christ.

I avoided the term, "Christian," because it has so many meanings.

This form requires the following condition: both conjuncts cannot be true.

## **Fallacy of Denying a Conjunct (not valid: DCj)**

A cannot be both B and C  
A is not B; therefore A is C

A cannot be both B and C  
A is not C; therefore A is B

Bill cannot be both an atheist and a follower of Christ.  
Bill is not an atheist; therefore, Bill is a follower of Christ.

Bill could be a Buddhist, a Muslim, or a religious person who isn't following Christ.

## **Dilemmas**



A dilemma presents a relationship between two distinct choices. You call this relationship a “disjunction.” A disjunction chooses between two alternatives. One alternative is true. The other is false. A conditional states an if-then proposition. A dilemma is both disjunctive and conditional.

The major premise is conditional. The major premise will have two or more conditional propositions. The form is “If antecedent, then consequent.”

The minor premise is disjunctive. The minor premise either affirms the antecedents or denies the consequents. To affirm is to say it’s true. To deny is to say it’s false. If it affirms the antecedents, you call it a “constructive dilemma.” If it denies the consequents, you call it a “destructive dilemma.”

A dilemma is also called a syllogismus cornutus. Syllogismus cornutus means a horned argument. The dilemma presents two alternatives. The alternatives are “the horns of the dilemma.” If you can show another alternative that wasn’t mentioned, you’ve escaped the horns of the dilemma.

## **Constructive Dilemmas**

### ***Simple Constructive Dilemma:***

Either A or B  
But, if A, then Z; if B, then Z.  
Therefore Z.

Either I must be perfect to get to heaven, or I must be religious.  
But if I try to be perfect, I don’t seem to be good enough, so I fail; if I am religious, I don’t know when I have been religious enough so I fail.  
Therefore, I fail in my attempt to go to heaven.

You escape the horns of the dilemma since another option is available. God provides another option. Christ has paid the price of your sins. He has opened the door. If you believe and trust Him, you’re born again and will go to heaven. He sends His Holy Spirit to

teach you all things. By grace, through faith, you can grow in Christ and be set free. The person presenting this false dilemma needs to hear the Gospel. It's truly good news.

### ***Complex Constructive Dilemma:***

Either A or B.

But, if A, then X; if B, then Y.

Therefore either X or Y.

### **Destructive Dilemmas**

#### ***Simple Destructive Dilemma:***

If A, then X and Y

But, either not-X or not-Y.

Therefore not-A.

#### ***Complex Destructive Dilemma:***

If A then X; and if B, then Y.

But, either not-X or not-Y.

Therefore either not-A or not-B.

-

If a man is wise, he would not speak irreverently of holy things in jest;

and if he is good, he would not do so in earnest.

But this man does it either in jest or earnest.

Therefore this man is either not wise or not good.

### **Rules for Dilemmas**

- Don't leave any viable alternatives out of the either-or. Beware of false dichotomy.
- Beware of a non sequitur. In the minor premise, the consequent must follow from the antecedents.
- The dilemma must be logically sound in every way.

### **Sorites**



A sorites is a polysyllogism. A polysyllogism presents many syllogisms in one argument. It has some other names:

- multi-premise syllogism
- climax
- gradatio

You only use simple syllogisms. You don't state conclusions. Each step is a prosyllogism.

Prosyllogism : a syllogism with a conclusion that becomes a premise of a following syllogism ~ Merriam-Webster

You use each prosyllogism (or partial syllogism) as the premise of the next. You use the final syllogism as your conclusion. You must know the first statement is true. For every prosyllogism, you need to ask, "How do you know?" and "How can I test it so I can know it?" A thought chain is as strong as its weakest link. If you can't absolutely know one of these prosyllogisms, then the entire argument is unsound.

A is B  
B is C  
C is D  
D is E  
Therefore, A is E

If A, then B.  
If B, then C.  
If C, then D.  
If D, then E.  
Therefore, if A, then E.

**If you state the conclusions:**

A is F.

A is B; therefore, B is F  
B is C; therefore, C is F  
C is D; therefore, D is F  
D is E; therefore, E is F

## **Rule 1: Negative Premise-Negative Conclusion**

All but the last premise must be affirmative. If any premise is negative, the conclusion must be negative.

A is B  
B is C  
C is D  
D is not E  
Therefore, A is not E

## **Rule 2: Particular Premise- Particular Conclusion**

All but the first premise must be universal. If the first premise is particular, the conclusion must be particular.

Some A is B  
B is C  
C is D  
D is not E  
Therefore some A is not E

A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher. He would either be a lunatic—on the level with a man who says he is a poached egg—or He would be the devil of hell. You must take your choice. Either this was, and is, the Son of God, or else a madman or something worse. You can shut Him up for a fool or you can fall at His feet and call Him Lord and God. But let us not come with any patronizing nonsense about His being a great human teacher. He has not left that open to us. ~ C. S. Lewis, *Mere Christianity*

## **Epicheremes**



An epichereme is a syllogism in which a proof is joined to one or both of the premises. The proof is joined to the premise by a connective. Examples of connectives:

- For
- Because
- Since
- due to

**Proof:** A reason to believe the premise is true

(It's necessary to check proofs to see if they really prove what they say they prove. You must make sure you don't need to prove the proof before going forward. That's almost always a problem. The exception to this problem is divine revelation.

**Casual Clause:** If a causal relationship exists between two things, one thing causes the other thing

The cause will be connected to the premise by a connective, like "because," that shows cause. When a persuader claims a cause for an effect, you ask if the cause fully proves the claim. You find it often doesn't prove the claim is true.

**Enthymeme:** The premise to which proof is attached

A is B because X

C is A because Y

Therefore, C is B

**Example:**

Christ leads every person who follows Him and comes to know Him personally. You know it because God reveals it. God reveals it to you through Scripture. He reveals it by the testimony of the Holy Spirit through all who experience it. I also personally know it by the revelation of Christ to me as He leads me moment-by-moment.

You can follow Christ if you're willing since Christ died and rose again to pardon you and set you free from your own sins just as He's done for everyone else who follows Him.

Therefore, you can also prove Christ to yourself and come to know Him personally. You merely need to seek Him in sincerity, humility, and with a will to do His will.

## **Enthymemes**



An enthymeme is a syllogism that omits one premise or the conclusion. The audience often must guess the missing information. Guessing is not the best way to know.

### **Three Orders of Enthymemes**

#### ***First Order: omitted major premise***

You can follow Christ if you're willing since Christ died and rose again to pardon you and set you free from your own sins just as he has for everyone else who follows Him.

Therefore, you can also prove Christ to yourself and know Him personally by seeking Him in sincerity, humility, and with a will to do His will.

#### ***Second Order: omitted minor premise***

Christ leads every person who follows Him and knows Him personally. You know it because God reveals it to you. He speaks to you through Scripture. He speaks by the testimony of the Holy Spirit through all those who experience it. I also personally know it by Christ revealing it to me as He leads me moment-by-moment.

Therefore, you can also prove Christ to yourself and know Him personally by seeking Him in sincerity, humility, and with a will to do His will.

## ***Third Order: omitted conclusion***

Christ leads every person who follows Him and knows Him personally. You know it because God reveals it to you. He speaks to you through Scripture. He speaks by the testimony of the Holy Spirit through all those who experience it. I also personally know it by Christ revealing it to me as He leads me moment-by-moment.

Therefore, you can also prove Christ to yourself and know Him personally by seeking Him in sincerity, humility, and with a will to do His will.

## **Nine Rules of Inference**



You can use all nine forms to prove a conclusion providing the premise is true. If the form of the argument is valid, but you don't know the premise is true, the logic is unsound. The reasoning isn't sound. If you can't put any argument into one of these forms, the argument is invalid. An invalid argument is also unsound. If the premise is true and the form is valid, then the argument is sound and the conclusion is true.

### **Modus Ponens (M.P.)**

If S then P  
S  
Therefore P

If I know Jesus Christ, then Jesus Christ exists.  
I know Jesus Christ.  
Therefore, Jesus Christ exists.

### **Modus Tollens (M.T.)**

If S then P  
Not P  
Therefore not S

If new revelation could conflict with the Bible, then God would conflict with Himself.  
God doesn't conflict with Himself.  
Therefore, revelation cannot conflict with the Bible.

(Note that your two premises must be true or the logic isn't sound. You do know the two premises are true. How do you know? You know by divine revelation.)

## **Hypothetical Syllogism (H.S.)**

If S then P  
If P then R  
Therefore if S then R

If new revelation could conflict with the Bible, then God could conflict with Himself.  
If God could conflict with Himself, then you couldn't trust God.  
Therefore, if new revelation could conflict with the Bible, then you couldn't trust God.

(Note that this logic doesn't resolve anything. You know, by divine revelation, that you can trust God. Therefore, you know new revelation will never conflict with the Bible.)

## **Disjunctive Syllogism (D.S.)**

S or P  
Not S  
Therefore P

Either you follow Christ or you are a slave of Satan (whether you know it or not.)  
You don't follow Christ. (You admit this, and you don't want to follow Christ.)  
Therefore, you are a slave of Satan.

## **Conjunction (Conj.)**

S  
P

Therefore S and P

God exists.

Satan exists.

Therefore, God exists and Satan exists.

## **Constructive Dilemma (C.D.)**

(If S then P) and (If C then D)

S or C

Therefore P or D

(if I obey the Holy Spirit, then I'm a servant of Christ.) and

(If I obey the culture, then I'm a servant of Satan.)

I either obey the Holy Spirit or I obey the culture.

Therefore, I'm either a servant of Christ or I'm a servant of Satan.

## **Simplification (Simp.)**

S and P

Therefore S

God is to be praised eternally and God is to be praised throughout the ages.

Therefore, God is to be praised eternally.

## **Absorption (Abs.)**

If S then P

Therefore If S (S or P)

If I love Jesus, then I'll listen to His leading and obey Him.

Therefore, if I love Jesus, it's true that I love Jesus, and it's also true that I'll listen to His leading and obey Him.

## **Addition (Add.)**

S

Therefore S or Q

Jesus is real.

Therefore, Jesus is real, or elephants don't exist.

According to this rule, you can put anything you like into Q. This seems to be a rule that could prove anything with no proof at all. You just add whatever you like to a known fact. Does that make sense? Not to me. Here's what philosophypages.com says about it:

This rule warrants the inference from any true statement to its disjunction with anything whatsoever. This is an amazingly powerful device, since it permits us to introduce any new statement whatsoever into the context of a proof. Our challenge in applying it will lie in discovering an appropriate or helpful substitution for  $q$  in each specific case.

You, as a reader, may see some value in this "Addition," but I, as an author, do not. I think this is part of the reason the world has become so crazy.

# Definitions



## **Abstraction**

A concept, idea, theory, etc. as opposed to a part of reality

A partial view of reality without the context

## **Affirm**

Proclaim true or assert as true

## **Antecedent**

A thing or event that logically or chronologically precedes another thing or event. In a hypothetical proposition (if-then statement), the first part is the antecedent and the second part is the consequent. The form will be “If antecedent, then consequent.”

## **Argument**

Reasoning consisting of one or more **premises** plus a conclusion

A logical argument isn't a disagreement or verbal fight. Rather, it's the reasoning by which you can rationally conclude a truth. Not all arguments are rational, and no one can know anything by irrational

arguments. Only sound arguments result in knowledge. Sound arguments have true premises and proper form, which means they also have a conclusion that follows from the premises. If the premise or premises are all true and the form is valid, then the conclusion must be true.

The argument can be inductive or deductive. Inductive arguments don't lead to knowledge of truth. They merely suggest matters for further study. You can use them for pragmatic decision-making when true knowledge isn't available, but you risk being wrong when you do. You can test inductive arguments with deductive arguments.

Abductive arguments are, in many cases, mere guesses. And yet, God does reveal reality through intuition. You must test the spirits to make sure they're from God. Deductive arguments, on the other hand, lead to knowledge if they're sound. At the same time, sound deductive arguments must have true premises, and true premises come only from God.

## **Atheistic Paradigm**

A philosophy, religion, or worldview that excludes God

The atheistic paradigm is contrary to fact because God declares that all atheists know He exists. God tells you they know what humans can know about the Godhead. They also know God is just and He judges sin. But they still refuse to acknowledge God, so God turns them over to their own corrupt minds, and they suppress the truth of God in their unrighteousness [deceitful trickery]. In these cases, their senseless minds become darkened.

## **Bias**

Prejudice, predisposition, partiality, partisanship, favoritism, or unfairness either for or against a conclusion

Persuaders usually are biased toward their own individual worldviews. A worldview favors one result or conclusion over another. However, persuaders can develop a bias in other ways. Here are some examples:

- greed
- self-benefit
- fear
- rebellion against God
- worldview
- peer pressure
- external coercion

## **Bibliolatry**

### **Worship of the Bible**

Bibliolatry is a term many denominations use since 1847 to refer to worshiping the Bible rather than worshiping God. You commit idolatry if you worship the Bible. However, God speaks to you through the Bible, and you can't read the Bible or hear someone reading the Bible without hearing God's voice. God shows you the Bible doesn't conflict with itself or any external reality.

## **Categorical Proposition**

Claiming or denying some or all members of one class are included in another class

(Smokescreen)

### **Form:**

All X are Y.

No X are Y.

Some X are Y.

Some X are not Y.

### **Examples:**

Most people are basically good.

There's not a just person on earth who does what's right and doesn't sin.

Some people are good, and some people are bad.

## **Categorical Syllogism**

A syllogism meeting the following conditions: a single conclusion following from two premise statements, a major premise, and a minor premise with three categorical terms, **major term**, **minor term**, and middle term, each used exactly twice

(Smokescreen)

Logic classes and logic books sometimes imply a categorical syllogism with valid form will always give you a true conclusion. That isn't true. However, if you know the premises are true and the form is valid, then the conclusion is true. Ungodly thinkers can't know any premise is true because of the ungodly thinking problem and the ungodly thinking trilemma. For this reason, ungodly thinkers try to find ways around the problem of the true premise.

## **Circumstantial Evidence**

Affirming information that depends on assumptions, preconceived ideas, or imagination

### **Examples:**

- Inductive reasoning uses circumstantial evidence. Therefore, you can only form tentative opinions using inductive reasoning, and you have the potential of being wrong. You can use these opinions when you don't have sound deductive reasoning. You choose between ways by looking at possible outcomes for each way. You choose the least risky way and the way with the highest potential gain.

- Scientist and engineers base all their conclusions on circumstantial evidence until they have extensively tested the products of the science and engineering. Even then, consumers discover dangerous flaws in many products after using those products for years.
- Scientists base all their claims about the distant past on circumstantial evidence. You can't test the stories about the distant past since they go beyond the observations.
- Many people are convicted based on circumstantial evidence. Then, years later new evidence shows they were convicted unjustly.

Since assumptions, preconceived ideas, or imagined stories are arbitrary, you can't rationally use them to support a conclusion.

## **Class**

(a.k.a. Set, Group)

A category of things having one or more qualities in common setting it apart from other categories

A group, set, or kind sharing common attributes

## **Cogency**

Persuasiveness

Being cogent isn't being rational. A cogent person persuades. Cogency is persuasive skill. The most irrational people are often the most cogent.

## **Conclusion**

the necessary outcome of one or more premises

## **Consequent**

A thing or event that logically or chronologically follows another thing or event. In a hypothetical

proposition (if-then statement), the first part is the antecedent and the second part is the consequent. The form will be “If antecedent, then consequent.”

## **Comparative**

A statement comparing two or more things

## **Complement**

A **predicate noun** or completer

oT A noun or noun phrase (the complement) must follow a verb that doesn't need a direct object to complete its meaning. Though the verb doesn't need a direct object, the sentence needs the complement to complete its meaning. A complement completes the verb.

### **Examples:**

oT Bill is my buddy.

oT The word “buddy” is the complement.

oT Discernment is the problem.

oT The word “problem” is the complement.

## **Conclusion**

A claim

When people state conclusions, they sometimes offer proof (premises). Sometimes they just state conclusions as facts without offering proof. Sometimes they offer proof, but you can't know whether the proof is true. Sometimes they offer proof, but the proof doesn't prove the conclusion. At other happy times, they offer true proof that actually proves the conclusion.

## **Conditional**

(a.k.a. Conditional Statement)

## An if-then statement

### **Form:**

If X is true, then Y is true.

If X is false, then Y is false.

If X is false, then Y is true.

If X is true, then Y is false.

## **Conditional Syllogism**

A syllogism based on at least one conditional (if-then) statement

## **Conjunction**

Reasoning regarding two propositions that results in a truth-value of true if both of its operands (proposition statements) are true, but otherwise, the truth-value is false

## **Conjunctive Statement**

A statement composed of two statements joined by an “and”

## **Conjunctive Syllogism**

A syllogism that offers two true choices

## **Consequence**

The effect or result of an action or condition

## **Consequent**

The effect or result of an action or condition

## **Consistency**

Reasoning without inner conflict

When a thinker states a piece of logic consistently, premises don't conflict with each other, and the conclusion doesn't conflict with the premises. Rather, the premises support (prove) the premises. Thinkers separate inconsistencies of thought. If they have two inconsistent beliefs, they don't think about both beliefs at the same time. They find ways to keep one hidden when thinking about the other. When people become aware they aren't making sense, they make an effort to keep others from exposing their inconsistencies. They usually try to avoid thinking about them.

## **Contingent Proposition**

A proposition that's neither true nor false in itself since its truth-value is dependent on some condition

### **Examples:**

But if I drive out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. ~ *Matthew 12:28 Berean Study Bible*

But if we confess our sins to him, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all wickedness. ~ *1 John 1:9 Berean Study Bible*

But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin. ~ *1 John 1:7 Berean Study Bible*

If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. ~ *2 Chronicles 7:14 King James Bible*

**Form:**

If X, then Y.

**Contraposition**

The conversion of a statement from “All X is Z” to “All not-X is not-Z”

**Contrary Propositions**

Propositions that can't all be true at the same time in the same way

**Conversion**

The act of swapping the subject and the [predicate](#)

**Correlative**

A statement or concept related to another statement or concept

X is similar to Z.

X causes Z.

**Counterexample**

An example that shows a proposed conclusion to be false

An example that runs counter to the conclusion; an exception to the rule

An exception to a rule doesn't necessarily get rid of the rule, but it does show there are exceptions to the rule.

**Deduction**

(a.k.a. Deductive Reasoning)

Reasoning where conclusions must be true if **premises** are true and the form is valid

A conclusion isn't true just because a thinker uses deductive reasoning since deductive reasoning can be unsound.

**Examples of unsound reasoning:**

- The reasoner uses unproven premises.
- The reasoner uses premises that depend on the unknown.
- The reasoner uses premises that depend on a regression of unproven "proofs."
- The conclusion includes information that isn't in the premises.
- The conclusion ignores at least one conflicting consequence of the premises.
- The premises conflict with each other.
- The form may be invalid.

Any of these make the deductive reasoning unsound.

You must be in the presence of Christ for sound deductive reasoning since Christ must reveal the premises. Christ must be present when you conclude anything, or the conclusion isn't true. Christ must be revealed in every statement because Christ is the Truth, Christ is the Wisdom, and Christ is the Knowledge, so without Christ, there's no true premise and no sound reasoning.

**Defeasible Position**

A proposition that's open to correction

**Demagogue**

One who uses false claims and popular prejudice to gain power

One who attacks others to build political power, personal popularity, a belief or philosophy, or an organization

## **Deny**

proclaim false; assert as untrue

## **Definiendum**

An idea, word, phrase, or anything being defined

## **Definiens**

The statements that define the definiendum (what's being defined)

## **Determinism**

The belief that something causes every effect

Determinism embraces the Law of Cause and Effect. The Law of Cause and Effect is necessary for the scientific method to work.

## **Dilemma**

A situation in which two mutually exclusive undesirable choices are the only choices

A dilemma consists of two hypothetical syllogisms plus a disjunction. If you're in a dilemma, you have two choices, but they can't both be true. They're distinct alternatives. Neither one is good, and you must choose one.

## **Disjunction**

The relationship between two distinct alternatives

## **Disjunctive Statement**

A statement composed of two statements joined by an “or”

Either God created the universe or it came into being without God.

Bill Nye is either an engineer or a comedian.

## **Distributed**

A term in a categorical proposition referring to all the members of a class

You say a term is distributed when it states or implies “all.”

### **Example:**

All cats are animals.

## **Emphasis**

(a.k.a. Accent Fallacy, Accent by Emphasis, or Emphatic Fallacy)

Emphasizing a word, thought, or phrase to change the way you understand a statement

### **Examples of ways to emphasize:**

- pace
- pause
- voice inflection
- voice quality
- italics
- bold typeface
- giving more detail
- search engine ranking or even censorship
- social media filtering and censorship
- news filtering
- censorship of any kind

- flashing lights
- neon
- spam

The means of emphasis go from mild methods like pace, pause, and voice inflection to extreme methods such as filtering or censorship. Accenting certain words can affect the meaning of a sentence, or accenting certain paragraphs in a book can change the meaning of the book. In the same way, emphasizing certain scientific observations can change the meaning of the observations. Persuaders emphasize selected news and down-play other news to distort the viewers' impression of reality.

## **Empirical**

Whatever is derived by experimentation, experience, or direct observation

You create empirical data by experimenting (experiencing) and observing. You don't call data empirical unless many people repeat the experiments and show the same results. You contrast empirical science with theoretical science since theory always speculates beyond what you can observe or experience. Theories are explanations of observations that go beyond what you can observe. They remain theories unless you can repeatedly observe and test them. For instance, you would need to experience and observe theories about the distant past in the distant past. You would need a time machine to do that. Since you can't do that, you can never test them. Therefore, they aren't empirical.

## **Enthymeme**

An abbreviated **categorical syllogism** where one of its **premises** or its conclusion isn't expressed

Enthymemes leave you guessing. A persuader states logic without certain pieces of the logic. You try to fill in the blanks, but you sometimes guess wrong. Unfortunately, in most communication, persuaders don't express their complete logic.

## **Epicheireme**

A syllogism that joins proof to one or both **premises**

Persuaders often express the proof in a casual clause beginning with a word like “because” or “since.”

I know Christ exists because He leads, teaches, corrects, and purifies me moment by moment.

This statement explains the proof, but it's not the proof itself since each person must find Christ himself or herself. The good news is that every person who seeks Christ finds Christ, so anyone can receive his or her own proof from Christ directly.

### **Fallacy Example:**

If humankind didn't evolve from ape-like ancestors, then that would put the body of scientific knowledge into question since the body of scientific knowledge demands evolution from ape-like ancestors. But since humankind evolved from ape-like ancestors, no one can question the body of scientific knowledge. Therefore, humankind evolved from ape-like ancestors.

A persuader joins “proof” to each of the two premises, yet gives no proof for this so-called “proof.” The causal clause (the clause expressing a cause) embeds a presupposition into the sentence. Presupposition is a tactic to bypass critical thinking. Also, the logic isn't sound because it's circular.

## **Epistemology**

The study of how you can know about things

## **Evanjellyfish Christianity**

Christians who go with the flow of society rather than following Christ

## **Evolutionism Paradigm**

(a.k.a. the big-bang-billions-of-years-no-Flood-molecules-to-humankind story)

A complex, interdependent set of beliefs and stories that include a big bang, billions of years, no Flood, life from non-life, and molecules to humankind

Not one of the stories of Evolutionism can stand on its own. They're all interdependent, but there's no hard evidence of any of them since all these stories rest on made-up stuff.

## **Extension**

The reality to which a word, phrase, or statement corresponds

Extension is compared to intension. Extension and intension are both related to reality but in different ways. Extension is reality. Intension is about reality and focuses on worldviews (beliefs and mental states), what a person believes, reasons, wants, thinks, hopes, fears, assumes, etc.

## **Faith**

A supernatural belief (certainty) and trust in God and in what God is saying

The absolutely certain proof of things not seen

The reality of God's absolute vision of hope as opposed to conceptual make-believe

A gift of God that comes as you listen to His utterance and acknowledge Him

Faith comes by hearing and hearing comes by the utterance of God. It's the gift of God lest anyone should boast, and Jesus Christ is the Author and Finisher of your faith. When God leads, He provides the power to believe what He says, and whoever wants to do God's

will know the difference between what comes from God and what doesn't come from God. God will see to it. Satan may fool you sometimes for a while, but God will prevail when you desire to follow Him. This faith is substance and absolute proof that comes from God speaking.

Looking to Jesus the author and finisher of our faith ~  
*Hebrews 12:2a Webster's Bible Translation*

You can't self-generate faith. Rather, Jesus authors it. Without God speaking, no one can have real faith, and without God speaking, no one can know anything. So without God's revelation, there's no method by which anyone can know truth.

You translate the noun "faith" from the Greek noun "pistis." You translate the verb "believe" from the Greek verb "pisteuo." Both words point to obedience. You need grace for obedience though. You receive the gift of righteousness by grace, and grace is through faith. In other words, faith gives you access into this grace, and grace is God's gift, which does His righteousness through you.

There's also a make-believe faith, which is a human-generated faith. Make-believe faith is always based on at least one fallacy. You can strain to make yourself believe something, but straining isn't effective since it's like trying to pull yourself up to the ceiling by yanking on your shoestrings. Only yielding to Christ, standing in His presence, and acknowledging His leading will bring the necessary faith.

## **Fake News**

(a.k.a. Propaganda News, Pravda, Ungodly News, or News Abuse)

Lying news sources used to brainwash many people

## **Fallacy**

(a.k.a. Paralogism)

Any method, tactic, statement, or way of thinking that blurs the distinction between reality and make-

# believe

Google's dictionary defines it this way:

a mistaken belief, especially one based on unsound argument. a failure in reasoning that renders an argument invalid. faulty reasoning; misleading or unsound argument.

- misconception
- misbelief
- delusion
- mistaken impression
- error
- misapprehension
- misinterpretation
- misconstruction
- mistake

While fallacies begin as thoughts, they expose themselves as words and deeds. Fallacies are methods of deception. You can deceive yourself with fallacies. Others can deceive you, or you can deceive others with fallacies. All fallacies resolve to ways of making made-up stuff seem to be real stuff.

## **Form**

The pattern of the reasoning

The structure of the logical argument

The form is the way you use language to put the premises and conclusion together in a relationship. The pattern of the reasoning is the form of the reasoning. You could think of it as the structure of the reasoning.

## **Generalization**

A statement about a class rather than an individual

## **Grace**

God's imparted justification

God's power both to will and to do His good pleasure

The gift of righteousness

Unmerited favor from God

God's free gift

Faith gives access to grace, and faith only comes by hearing God's utterance. In other words, God must be leading, and the person receiving faith must be in submission to the Holy Spirit. Then the Holy Spirit will do His works through the Christ-follower, but only if the Christ-follower willingly submits. Grace is the only means by which any person can ever do any good works.

This doesn't mean you strain to submit as if submission were some form of work, but rather, submission is simply not resisting God. Resisting God takes effort, and an endless self-righteousness effort is the natural status of fallen humanity. Resisting God requires deceitful trickery.

For clarity, you know some people define "grace" as pardon, others define "grace" as good manners, and still others define "grace" as mercy. However, none of these is a biblical definition of "grace" since grace is so much more than these definitions of "grace."

## **Haldane's Dilemma**

A problem with the Theory of Evolution that makes the story unworkable

Haldane was an evolutionist who fully believed in evolution, yet he ran into a problem with the theory. In 1957, he published a paper called "Cost of Substitution." His paper raised a stir for a while, but then it was quietly set aside without dealing with the problem.

The take-home message which was not spelled out in his paper, because it was written to be submitted to

mainstream (evolutionary) journals is: the evolutionary origin of organisms with low reproduction rates and long generation times (many 'higher' animals) is impossible, even given the usual millions of years assigned to the history of species on Earth. ~  
*<https://creation.com/haldanes-dilemma-has-not-been-solved>*

## **Heart**

### **Innermost mind**

In the New Testament Bible, the Greek word “kardia” means “the innermost being,” and it’s translated as “heart.” In the Old Testament Bible, the Hebrew word “leb” means “mind,” “will,” or “understanding.” The heart, in this sense, is the mind rather than the body. Just as the heart of the body sends blood with what is needed to sustain life in the body, in some sense, the heart of the mind sends what is needed to sustain life in the mind. The words “reins” and “conscience” can also mean “innermost mind.” You don’t completely understand this issue, but God is working with you on the level of mind, and that’s where you battle Satan. Out of the heart are the issues of life. (Proverbs 4:23)

## **Humanistic Paradigm**

(a.k.a. Secular Humanism or Humanism)

**A worldview that assumes no God**

**The paradigm of a denomination of ungodliness**

Humanism dogmatically supposes and preaches no God other than humanity. Humanists are ungodly thinkers. As a result, Humanist thinking must use made-up stuff as proof. Humanists can’t rationally reason beyond their immediate sensations. And yet, Humanism itself is a philosophy that reasons beyond immediate human sensations. Therefore, the philosophy is irrational. Despite this fact, Humanists work hard to enforce their doctrine, making message control a high priority. They work hard to censor all messages other than their own.

The entire creation speaks to every person about God through observation. That way no Humanist has any excuse before God, and God will hold them accountable. God reveals Himself to them through His creation and the words of Christ-followers as the Holy Spirit speaks through them. But Humanists are in denial. They hide behind the humanistic paradigm, which is a fake-reality.

## **Hypothesis**

A speculative explanation that's proposed based on limited evidence

Although hypotheses aren't supposed to conflict with any known facts, they sometimes do. When they conflict with known facts, scientists may propose a just-so story to explain away the facts. They usually do that to rescue sacred cow stories like the big bang story.

## **Immediate Inference**

Reasoning using a single [premise](#)

### **Examples:**

Since I know Jesus personally, I know He exists.

You could state this same reasoning with two premises as follows:

If a person knows someone personally, this person knows the other person exists. I know Jesus personally; therefore, I know He exists.

In the ultimate sense, the first premise isn't necessarily true. Some people hallucinate. You can't prove the first premise. However, with God, He unmistakably reveals Himself. He provides the revelation and the discernment between what is from Him and what isn't from Him. You can check this by asking Jesus Christ to reveal Himself and His truth to you and by desiring His righteousness in your life. If you yield yourself totally to His righteousness as He leads you, you will know the truth and the truth will set you free. That will prove the first premise. Ungodly persuaders may try to use gaslighting fallacies on you, but the Holy Spirit imparts confidence and certainty in the form of the faith of God. Every statement against the reality of God is

based on made-up stuff. It's always divine revelation versus made-up stuff.

## **Inclusive “Or”**

The word “or” when it's used to mean one or more of the claims could be true

“Or” can mean any of these:

- all the claims could be true
- some of the claims could be true
- one of the claims could be true
- one and only one of the claims must be true (exclusive “or”)
- one or more of the claims must be true

An inclusive “or” says things aren't mutually exclusive. If one is true, then the other may be either true or false. However, the word “or” can also be exclusive so if one is true, the other must be false.

## **Inductive Reasoning**

(a.k.a. Induction)

A method of reasoning using multiple premises said to be “strong but inconclusive evidence” for an indefinite conclusion

Ungodly science uses inductive reasoning, but it doesn't use sound deductive reasoning. No one can use sound deductive reasoning to prove that inductive reasoning is valid for finding truth. That's why ungodly thinkers justify inductive reasoning using either inductive reasoning or unsound deductive reasoning. Trying to prove the validity of inductive reasoning using inductive reasoning is a circular reasoning fallacy. Trying to prove the validity of inductive reasoning (or anything else) with unsound deductive reasoning is an axiomatic thinking fallacy. Even ungodly thinkers admit this:

Even if all of the premises are true in a statement,  
inductive reasoning allows for the conclusion to be false. ~  
*LiveScience*

Scientists and pseudoscientists should know science is inductive and inductive reasoning can lead to untrue conclusions. So, no one should become dogmatic about the claims of scientists. And yet, you experience and witness dogmatism everywhere you look.

Inductive reasoning begins by making observations, and it then draws broad conclusions based on those observations. Inductive reasoning uses premises just as deductive reasoning uses premises. Persuaders using induction must prove their premises just as they would have to in deductive reasoning. However, persuaders using both forms of reasoning sometimes accept unproven premises. If they accept unproven premises, the reasoning is useless except as a tool for deception.

Persuaders can prove conclusions with sound deductive reasoning. Sound deductive reasoning has valid form and true premises. Persuader can't prove conclusions with sound inductive reasoning no matter what they do. They can only suggest tentative conclusions, which are opinions, using inductive reasoning.

You reason inductively for pragmatic decision-making when you don't have a true premise. If you do use induction, you're reasoning on the level of a brute beast that's incapable of rational thought. You just depend on your instincts and natural senses. You can't determine truth this way. You can be dead wrong using pragmatic decision-making. That being the case, you should carefully consider the consequences of being wrong when using inductive reasoning.

You don't commit a fallacy by simply reasoning inductively. However, you do commit a fallacy by trying to find conclusive knowledge through inductive reasoning.

If you use an inductive conclusion as a [premise](#) for a deductive argument, you prove nothing.

**Related:**

deductive reasoning

# Inference

a conclusion or opinion formed based on one or more premises

Since inference can be either a conclusion or an opinion that is formed, I don't use the word. I use the word conclusion, which implies it is conclusive. However, be aware that others may think of inference as an opinion.

# Intensional Context

(a.k.a. Intension)

**Worldviews**, beliefs, and mental states used as the context of thinking, including wants, thoughts, wishes, goals, fears, and assumptions

Intensional context is compared to extensional context. On the one side, extension is reality, and on the other side, intension isn't reality but rather consists of thoughts, words, phrases, and statements about reality.

You can consider things that don't exist in the intensional context. You can consider things that have no extensional context. Of course, you completely break from reality when you think about things that have no extensional context in reality.

The extensional context consists of all states of a person, place, or thing, and these states include all past, present, future, spiritual, and physical states. You need to know the difference between your worldview (the intensional context) and reality (the extensional context). The extensional context is the context of the actual person, place, or thing designated. The intensional context is the inner worldview and resulting inner mental states concerning the person, place, or thing. The inner worldview and associated inner mental states concerning the persons, places, and things you call "intensions." The persons, places, or things themselves (the external realities) you call "extensions." The intensional properties aren't real

properties. They exist only in the inner worldview or the inner conceptualization.

**Example:**

Molecules-to-humanity Evolutionism has an intensional context, but it has no extensional context.

**Related:**

intensional fallacy, hooded man fallacy, illicit substitution of identicals fallacy, epistemic fallacy, Leibniz's Law, ontic fallacy, and confusing ontology and epistemology fallacy

## **Inverse**

The opposite or reverse of something

**Examples:**

- Evil is the inverse of good.
- A true premise is the inverse of an unproven premise.
- Telling the truth is the inverse of telling lies.

## **Leibniz's Law**

A rule of logic stating that identical things can't be different from one another

If two people, organizations, or entities are identical, all their attributes will be identical. For two things to be identical, they must be the same thing. Ravi Zacharias is identical to Ravi Zacharias even when he's called something else. To his daughter, Daddy is identical to Ravi Zacharias. Thinkers violate this law if they claim two identical things are different from each other. Thinkers also violate this law if they claim two things are identical when those two things are different from each other.

**Examples:**

- Revelation and made-up stuff are opposites, but ungodly thinkers often make up a story claiming they're identical.

- Some people claim there's a difference between the Law of God and love, but God says they are identical since love fulfills the whole Law.
- Some people claim sexual violations of God's Law are identical to love. They aren't since God's Law is love. Sexual violations of God's Law violate love.
- Sin is identical to stepping or slipping off the way that leads to life. However, a person who sins may forget that sin leads to death.
- Divine revelation is identical to God communicating, but some people deny this.

**Related:**

intensional fallacy, hooded man fallacy, illicit substitution of identicals fallacy, epistemic fallacy, ontic fallacy, and confusing ontology and epistemology fallacy

## **Logic**

### **Reasoning**

### **Verbal or Visual Reasoning**

Sound logic takes known facts and restates them as a conclusion, and, in the process, it claims the facts necessarily mean the conclusion is true. However, logic can be sound or unsound. Sound logic follows these rules:

- Sound logic cannot conflict with itself.
- Sound logic cannot conflict with reality.
- Two conflicting statements can't both be true at the same time and in the same relationship.
- Each thing is identical to itself.
- Any statement is either true or false. There's no middle between true and false, although a false statement may use a mixture of true statements and false statements to give the illusion of credibility.
- Something can't be true and not true in the same way at the same time.
- Sound logic requires true premises.

- Conclusions must follow from the premises.
- Unproven claims can't be premises in sound logic.
- Assumptions destroy sound reasoning.
- The conclusion of sound logic can't manufacture new information that's not in the premises.
- Sound logic doesn't try to hide any implications of the premises.

## Logical Argument

A piece of reasoning whether rational or not

A chain of logic whether sound or unsound

## Major Premise

The **premise** containing the **major term**

The major premise is the general statement containing the major term, which is the predicate of the conclusion, and the minor premise is the specific statement.

### Example:

**Major premise:** There's not a just person on the earth who always does what's right and doesn't sin.

**Minor premise:** I'm a person on the earth.

**Conclusion:** Therefore, I'm not a just person, I don't always do right, and I sometimes sin.

## Major Term

The predicate of the conclusion

### Related:

predicate

## Materialism Paradigm

A **paradigm** in which physical nature, matter, and energy are all that exists

Materialism is a paradigm in which God doesn't exist. And in this fake-reality, no spirits, angels, or spiritual realm exist. By that paradigm, materialistic thinkers assert universal negatives. Since ungodly thinkers build this paradigm by assuming only material things exist, they assert Materialism without proof.

## Middle Term

the term found in both premises of a categorical syllogism

## Minor Premise

The **premise** containing the **minor term**

The minor premise is the specific statement. The major premise is the general statement.

### Example:

**Major premise:** There's not a just person on the earth who always does what's right and doesn't sin.

**Minor premise:** I'm a person on the earth.

**Conclusion:** Therefore, I'm not a just person, I don't always do right, and I sometimes sin.

## Minor Term

The term that forms the subject of a **categorical syllogism** and also appears in either the subject or the **predicate** of the minor premise

The subject of the conclusion in a **categorical syllogism**

## **Mixed Hypothetical Syllogism**

A syllogism where one **premise** is **conditional**, and one premise affirms or denies either the antecedent or **consequent** of that **conditional statement**

## **Model**

A simplified representation of certain parts of reality

Models pull out parts of reality to understand the abstracted parts. In other words, models abstract parts of reality while ignoring other parts. While models can help you understand by making parts simpler, a model can also give the wrong impression.

You might confuse the model with reality itself. Since you abstracted the model from reality, it can't be reality. Rather, it's simply a tool for thinking about reality with this risk: the process of abstraction introduces some distortion of reality. And, in extreme cases, a model distorts reality to the point that the model isn't useful or becomes deceptive. A prime example of a model used for deception is Dawkins' weasel model (<https://goo.gl/2khkjc>) that Dawkins programmed using unrealistic assumptions to give you a false impression.

## **Modernism**

A philosophy based on the assumptions of Materialism, Naturalism, and Uniformitarianism

Modernists believe three assumptions: Materialism, Naturalism, and Uniformitarianism. Materialism assumes God doesn't exist. Naturalism assumes God does nothing. Uniformitarianism assumes God didn't create the universe and didn't send the Genesis Flood. Modernism is an attempt to prove God doesn't exist, does nothing,

didn't create the universe, and didn't send the Genesis Flood. It attempts to prove those four things by assuming those same four things. Assuming the thing that modernists are trying to prove and using those assumptions as proof is circular reasoning. And yet some people believed in modernism because they stood in the counsel of the ungodly rather than standing in God's presence.

## **Modifier**

A word or group of words that further defines another word or group of words in a sentence.

## **Narrow Scope**

Using a **modifier** to refine the meaning of a smaller portion of a sentence, concept, or entity

A term with a narrow scope modifies a smaller part of the sentence, but a term with a wide scope modifies a larger part or even the entire sentence.

## **Necessity**

A condition in which something is necessarily in a certain state

### **Examples:**

- necessarily true
- necessarily false
- necessarily unknown

## **Negation**

Declaring something false.

## **Neuro-Linguistic Programming**

A complex hypnotic system used in sales, politics, personal agendas, flimflam, or mental therapy

**Detail:**

Neuro-linguistic programming is most often characterized as a form of psychotherapy that can be used to modify behavior patterns and treat problems such as phobias, depression, learning disorders, and the like. It has also been classified as a quasi-religion belonging to the New Age or Human Potential Movements. However, NLP can also be covert, and it is the hidden nature of this technique that leads to disquieting applications. Specifically, NLP is a form of vocal and gestural hypnotism that is used by some public speakers—politicians, for example. ~ *gotquestions.org*

Neuro-linguistic programming employs many techniques of persuasion with an emphasis on pacing and leading, and many of the techniques are applications of fallacies. A search of the Internet for “Neuro-Linguistic Programming,” will turn up multiple sites on the subject. Here is one example: <http://www.hypnosisandnlp.net/>

**Obversion**

The act of swapping the **predicate** with its **complement**

**Occultism**

Using evil spirits (demons) as an alternative to God

The occult is demon worship. Followers of the occult include witches, neo-pagans, Wiccans, Satanists, and New Agers, but many of these don't realize they're dealing with demonic entities. Demonic entities go under many different names from spirit guides to ascended masters.

Adherents of these religions use occult methods to get knowledge or power as they seek to have fellowship with evil spiritual

principalities and powers. Though these evil entities may make themselves appear good or harmless, they're evil and destructive. That's why God forbids getting knowledge or power in this way, and He forbids yielding to these evil entities or listening to them.

In contrast, God wants you to seek His face with your entire heart, soul, and mind. He wants you to exercise gifts of God's Spirit and display the fruit of His Spirit. Not only that, but He promises He'll give you all the knowledge and power that you need and do His work through you if you seek and obey Him.

Unfortunately, fictional writing or other creative work glamorizes and actively promotes the occult. Examples would include novels about the occult, vampires, magic, and some science fiction. Also, some movies, TV dramas, and university courses are initiations into the occult. You find other examples in cartoons, games, comic books, and music. A surprising method of promoting the occult is to silently weave it into the fabric of health, exercise, self-help, positive mental attitude, or success classes and books. Some music is also demonic. That's why you continually pray for God to help you to discern and avoid evil.

You could walk down an innocent-looking road, but if Christ isn't on the road, you know something is wrong. Creating wonderful-sounding axioms and goals isn't God's method. He wants to be directly involved in your life.

Clement Stone and Napoleon Hill went off the narrow Path with positive mental attitude systems that failed to connect to Christ and depended on either the human spirit or evil spirits. Their systems could be used by either one.

Many have read the book "Think and Grow Rich" and have found it helpful in their lives. Some of the principles in this book are close replicas of what's true in the Spirit, but the danger comes from what's missing rather than from what's there. We could go over the thirteen principles of the book and show this to be true, but let's just go over the self-confidence formula. I'll compare the Think and Grow Rich formula to the walk of those who follow Christ.

### **Think and Grow Rich:**

First, I know that I have the ability to achieve the object of my Definite Purpose in life, therefore, I DEMAND of myself persistent, continuous action toward its attainment, and I here and now promise to render such action.

**Christ-Follower:**

First, I know Jesus Christ in me can achieve the object of His Definite Purpose for my life. I know it because Christ has revealed that fact to me. Therefore, I yield myself to His all-powerful Spirit so He can persistently and continuously act through me to attain His purpose. I here and now promise Him that I'll be faithful in seeking His will and yielding to His Spirit in every situation.

**Think and Grow Rich:**

Second. I realize the dominating thoughts of my mind will eventually reproduce themselves in outward, physical action and gradually transform themselves into physical reality; therefore, I will concentrate my thoughts for thirty minutes daily, upon the task of thinking of the person I intend to become thereby creating in my mind a clear mental picture of that person.

**Christ-Follower:**

Second. I realize the dominating thoughts of my mind will eventually reproduce themselves in outward, physical action and gradually transform themselves into physical reality. Therefore, I will take the time to read my Bible daily while I seek the mind of the Lord. As I read the Bible, I'll acknowledge the voice of Christ speaking to me through the Scripture. I will also spend time daily praying for those needs the Holy Spirit puts on my heart and standing in His presence seeking His mind. During this time, I will ask Him to reveal to me the person He intends me to become thereby creating in my mind a clear mental picture of that person.

**Think and Grow Rich:**

Third I know through the principle of autosuggestion, any desire that I persistently hold in my mind will eventually seek expression through some practical means of attaining the object back of it, therefore, I will devote ten minutes daily to demanding of myself the development of SELF CONFIDENCE.

**Christ-Follower:**

Third I know any desire I persistently hold in my mind will eventually seek expression through some practical means of attaining the object in back of it. I know the danger of fleshly desires, those desires that God didn't create. Therefore, I will devote time daily to asking God to create a new heart in me, a heart with His desires. I will ask Him to lead me in every aspect of my life. I will ask Him daily to give me His wisdom, knowledge, understanding, and righteousness. I will ask Him to protect me from the deception of leaning on my own understanding or being affected by the influence of ungodly human mind or evil spirits.

**Think and Grow Rich:**

Fourth, I have clearly written down a description of my DEFINITE CHIEF AIM in life, and I will never stop trying until I shall have developed sufficient self-confidence for its attainment.

**Christ-Follower:**

Fourth, God has written down His DEFINITE CHIEF PURPOSE for my life, to conform me to the image and likeness of Christ. I will never stop listening to His voice as I yield in humble submission and allow His love to flow through me in rational thoughts, words, and deeds until He attains His purpose in me.

**Think and Grow Rich:**

Fifth. I fully realize that no wealth or position can long endure unless built upon truth and justice. Therefore, I will engage in no transaction which does not benefit all whom it affects. I will succeed by attraction to myself the

forces I wish to use, and the cooperation of other people. I will induce others to serve me, because of my willingness to serve others. I will eliminate hatred, envy, jealousy, selfishness, and cynicism, but developing love for all humanity; because I know that a negative attitude toward others can never bring me success. I will cause others to believe in me because I will believe in them and in myself.

### **Christ-Follower:**

Fifth, I fully realize no wealth or position can long endure unless it's built on truth and justice. I also fully realize all truth and justice originates in Christ, and no action can benefit all whom it affects unless Christ begins and performs the action. I also confess my own inability to know for certain whether my actions may hurt others. Therefore, I will engage in no transaction that Jesus Christ doesn't direct and perform through me. If I sense the Holy Spirit isn't moving in me, I'll stop and ask Him to show me the way. If He doesn't go with me, I won't go.

I'll succeed by God's hand, knowing He will inevitably bring those resources that He needs to complete His will. He may induce others to work with me toward His goals, because of His grace and mercy and my willingness to serve Him.

I know He has a plan and pattern for His called-out people and He's called me to be a part of that company. I'll continually seek Him to guide me to fellowship that will fulfill His pattern as He reveals it through Scripture. I'll continually ask Him to show me who I am in Him and how I fit into the body of Christ.

He will eliminate hatred, envy, jealousy, selfishness, and cynicism. His love for all humanity will flow out through me. I know a negative attitude toward others can never result in success. I know anger doesn't work the righteousness of God. As I mature in Christ, His Spirit will shine so others will see Him, and I will recognize and honor Christ as He reveals Himself and His Spirit flowing through others who are following Him.

## **Think and Grow Rich:**

I will sign my name to this formula, commit it to memory and repeat it aloud once a day, with full FAITH that It will gradually influence my THOUGHTS and ACTIONS so I will become a self-reliant, and successful person.

## **Christ-Follower:**

It may not be a bad idea to sign my name to my commitments. God doesn't forbid it, but it isn't the pattern of Scripture. Commitments are part of the pattern of Scripture, but they must be led by the Holy Spirit and kept by the Holy Spirit. Note what happened at the base of Mount Sinai after the Israelites committed to serving God. They weren't able to keep their commitment, but they made a golden calf and began worshiping the calf instead of God. They did the same in trying to fulfill every part of God's Law by human effort. Human effort and commitment isn't the secret to spiritual success or any other kind of success. I find true success only in Christ as I yield myself to Christ.

As a special warning, the last chapter of Think and Grow Rich is a séance. It's all put in glorified language, but it's conjuring. Those who go that far will find they've opened the door for evil spirits to be active in their lives.

## **Ontology**

The study of empirical knowledge

The study of unfiltered, unprocessed perceptions

Ontology has a problem since unfiltered, unprocessed perceptions don't exist. If you believe they do exist, you call that the ontic fallacy. What makes human ontological knowledge impossible? No one perceives reality directly. The limits of your senses filter your perceptions. Your worldview further filters and distorts your perceptions. In other words, you automatically filter your physical experiences of the creation around you, so they're impure. Only spiritual maturity can correct this problem. You attain spiritual

maturity by seeking God, hearing His voice, and responding in submission to do His will by His power.

Some have questioned this method of attaining spiritual maturity. Some have argued that it can't work. However, God makes certain He gives the Holy Spirit to those who seek the Holy Spirit, and He won't give them something else. He's greater than your fallen human mind. Even if your desires pull you astray, He'll bring you back to Himself if you sincerely want to do His will. Even if you deceive yourself for a while, if you're sincere about wanting God's will rather than your own will, He'll get you back on the right path. However, if you're strong-willed and insist on your own way, He'll continue to call you back and even execute His judgment if necessary to turn you from your rebellion. Some people never yield to Him, and He won't force Himself on them if they persist.

## **Paradigm**

(a.k.a. Worldview, Filter, World Perception, Mindset, Context, The World in Your Heart, or Fake-Reality)

A fake-reality

A complete inner representation of what the mind perceives as reality

A lying vision in the human heart

A comprehensive lie residing in a human mind

Paradigms are fake-realities in the mind that seem more real than actual reality. These paradigms become strongholds in your mind. However, God has given you weapons of warfare that can tear down your strongholds.

While God gives you a vision of reality whenever He speaks to you, the liar, Satan, also gives you a vision of unreality. Satan's vision of unreality becomes a paradigm if you yield yourself to it. A vision takes in all the senses and becomes a relatively permanent part of

your mind. While you can change your paradigms, you can't change them easily.

For example, when Satan spoke to Eve about the forbidden fruit, God had given the truth to Eve, but Satan questioned what God had said and put a little twist on it. Then Satan proposed an alternate story, a paradigm. In that way, Satan was planting seeds into Eve's mind, and Eve decided to believe Satan instead of believing God. Choosing the lie gave root to the plantings of Satan in Eve's mind, and when she acted on what Satan had planted, that was the beginning of all the sorrows you see around you today.

## **Particular Affirmative**

A statement that claims something is true of some members of a class

Compare to universal affirmative

## **Particular Negative**

A statement that claims something is false for some members of a class

**Related:**

universal negative

## **Perfect Syllogism**

A syllogism where the conclusion obviously follows from the [premises](#)

A perfect syllogism doesn't necessarily have a true conclusion. The conclusion is true if the premises are true. But it doesn't necessarily have true premises. The argument isn't necessarily sound. So being a perfect syllogism only means the form is valid, and valid form doesn't assure truth.

**Related:**

formally correct fallacy

## **Personal Inconsistency**

Asserting contradictory statements to be true at the same time and in the same way

### **Example:**

**Sandy Sandbuilder:** I only accept scientific observation as proof.

**Rocky Rockbuilder:** Do you accept the assumption of Naturalism?

**Sandy:** I accept the assumption of Naturalism as the basis for interpreting scientific observation, and I don't require observation as proof of Naturalism.

**Rocky:** Then your first statement about only accepting scientific observation is untrue.

Naturalism isn't believing the natural world exists. It's believing the spiritual world doesn't exist, at least not in any way that impacts anything. For this reason, no one can observe Naturalism. It's conceptual only, and belief in Naturalism depends on pretending. Therefore, Sandy is being inconsistent since Sandy claims to accept scientific observation alone when Sandy accepts unobserved Naturalism, which Sandy hasn't observed.

## **Post-Modernism Paradigm**

A complete mental representation of the world that excludes absolutes, reason, science, the meaning of language, the meaning of life, and knowledge

Post-modernism is a final desperate attempt at ungodliness. Post-modernists imagine a world without God. This philosophy rejects revelation, language, and rational thought. And since post-modernism is relativistic, there's no right, wrong, truth, or error in this philosophy. Rather, only winners and losers exist. Teachers advise students of post-modernism to be winners.

One way to win is through presentation. That's why post-modernists hold presentation in high esteem. And this high regard for presentation has pervaded society, including churches. Post-modernism eliminates the validity of true knowledge, science, logic, or reason. However, post-modernists use these words ("knowledge," "science," "logic," and "reason") as magic words. They use these words to help them win. In the same way, they use phantom morality to win.

Consider a world with no truth or error. In such a world, there could be nothing wrong with self-refuting ideas or mutually exclusive claims. Of course, presenting mutually exclusive ideas where anyone can compare them isn't convincing since the obvious conflict doesn't persuade the masses. That's why post-modernism encapsulates various groupings of thoughts and carefully keeps these groupings separate from each other to avoid cognitive dissonance. Cognitive dissonance is the uncomfortable feeling you get when you realize parts of your worldview conflict. Encapsulation avoids comparing one part of your worldview to other parts of your worldview. Each encapsulated theory uses its own assumptions. This encapsulation makes it easy for persuaders to use double-standards and hide the conflicting assumptions.

## **Pragmatic Thinking**

A practical mode of thinking that deals only with the material world in the present but can't reason rationally to a true conclusion

But these, like irrational animals, having been born as creatures of instinct ~ *2 Peter 2:12a Berean Literal Bible*

Pragmatism thinks like irrational animals, destitute of reason. Pragmatists can reason, but they reason like animals. Animals can be very clever. They aren't stupid. Pragmatists can be clever too. Educated ungodly thinkers know pragmatists don't reason from a true premise but their reasoning isn't sound just as animals' reasoning isn't based on true premises and valid form. Most pragmatists believe they're evolved animals. They know they think like animals. They know about the Münchhausen trilemma that keeps

them from rational thought, and they're satisfied with this level of existence.

But these indeed speak evil of whatever things they have not seen; and whatever things they understand naturally, as the irrational animals, in these things they corrupt themselves. . . . These are those causing divisions, worldly-minded, not having the Spirit. ~ *Jude 1:10 & 19 Berean Literal Bible*

Ungodly thinkers speak evil of whatever they can't sense with their natural senses or whatever they don't know by their instincts. They're controlled by what humans have in common with animals, following their senses, appetites, and passions. The person governed by natural senses can't understand or accept spiritual truth. They think it's foolish.

because the mind of the flesh is hostility toward God; for it is not subject to the Law of God, for not even can it be. ~ *Romans 8:7 Berean Literal Bible*

When you try to think without divine revelation, you tend to disobey God's Law. This animal nature craves and incites sin. It can't do righteousness. It can't understand righteousness. It's deceitful and desperately wicked.

Pragmatists can't fulfill God's will. They can't prove that a premise is true, so they can't reason from a true premise. That means they can't reason rationally. God gave humans this natural mind for survival. It reacts to sense data: sight, smell, taste, feeling, and sound. Living organisms manage to stay alive by this brute-beast mind, which can be as clever as a raccoon but can't be rational without the Holy Spirit. God created your mind to live in His presence at a much higher level than the natural, brute-beast level.

In all that, God still reveals natural reality to this natural mind. Without God's revelation, you would die quickly. The natural mind can accept this natural revelation, but it doesn't necessarily notice God or give Him thanks.

You see the natural brute-beast mind working with divine revelation in science, and God imparts knowledge through the

scientific method. The brute-beast mind reacts to sense data, and you call that reaction “scientific observation.” God gave the scientific method to humanity so you could have pragmatic familiarity, a practical way of surviving. Pragmatic familiarity isn’t knowledge of truth. It’s practical, but it’s tentative. It’s an opinion rather than knowledge. When you can directly observe and test, pragmatism yields working products. When you can’t directly observe and test, pragmatism yields opinions. Pragmatism works for making cell phones that you can test and verify. It doesn’t work for topics like knowing how the universe came into existence, understanding morality, or knowing what God is going to do in the future.

If you acknowledge God when He reveals material and natural reality to you, you can rationally say you know what God reveals. However, when you fail to acknowledge God, you can’t have precise, accurate, and certain knowledge of truth. In that case, you’re blind and incapable of rational thought. So, you can see that this brute-beast mind currently drives and controls naturalistic, materialistic science. The brute-beast mind can be successful in making products, but it does poorly when it drifts into concepts such as Evolutionism, relativistic morality, or any topic that goes beyond what scientists can observe and test.

The brute-beast human mind can do science, but it can never know absolute truth. Since truth is absolute by nature, the brute-beast mind can never know truth. It’s pragmatic. The brute-beast mind can deal with the material world, but it can’t know anything about the spiritual world.

God reveals absolute, though partial, truth. A naturalist can observe that human knowledge is partial and progressive, but the naturalist won’t admit God reveals any knowledge that exists. God reveals spiritual truth and historical truth, but the brute-beast mind can’t self-generate this form of knowledge. And yet, this brute-beast mind continually has opinions about such matters as morality, sin, God, heaven, hell, ethics, politics, history, and truth. Not one of these is material. This brute-beast mind can be brilliant in creating testable technology like computers, medical equipment, and rockets. Science works pragmatically. Scientists and engineers develop prototypes and test them. When a product works, a pragmatist can produce it

and market it. However, pragmatic thinking can't test a historical story or a moral issue. God reveals a natural understanding of moral issues and some aspects of history to this human natural mind. You call that "conscience." However, as humans try to reason from this natural understanding, the brute-beast mind is incapable. The brute-beast mind begins to destroy the conscience and to twist it. This mind is incapable of anything but pragmatic reasoning. The only way out is acknowledging Christ.

Some students learn the lie: "science must be naturalistic." Naturalism is a closed-minded constraint on science. These students learn they can't consider God as a cause for anything. They eliminate God as a possible cause. However, they're not thinking rationally if they eliminate any possibility for causes. God designed science for open-minded exploration. Once these students close their minds, they eliminate part of what they can explore or understand.

God supplies everything you need. He even supplies what disbelievers need so they live to have the opportunity to seek Him. Some will seek Him and find Him. Others continue to reject Him and dishonor Him.

The pragmatic existence is a low existence. It's sad to see ungodly people living at such a low existence as an animal, but what about Christians living like that?

**Related:**

*Real Faith & Reason Volume One: The Brute Beast Mind*

## **Predicate**

The part of a sentence or clause containing a verb and making a statement about the subject

Something affirmed or denied concerning the subject

**Example:**

oT Bill is a Christian.

oT The phrase "is a Christian" constitutes the predicate.

## Predicate Noun

A completer or complement.

o<sub>T</sub>A predicate noun completes the verb of the o<sub>T</sub>predicate. A noun or noun phrase must follow a verb that doesn't need a direct object to complete its meaning. The noun or noun phrase completes the meaning of the sentence.

### Example:

o<sub>T</sub>Bill is a Christian.

o<sub>T</sub>The words "a Christian" constitute the predicate noun.

## Premise

(plural: premises)

The proof

The reason to believe the conclusion is true

a proposition that was previously supposed (made-up) or proved and is used as a basis of argument or inference

You must reject the idea of supposed premises simply because it is irrational to base thinking on made-up stuff. It blurs the line between reality and make-believe and is to blame for much of the insanity you see in the world today.

You must prove premises. The proof for premises must stand on its own without fallacy. You can't just declare it true or declare it to be self-evident. Premises can't depend on made-up stuff. They can't depend on assumption, infinite regression, circular reasoning, or any other fallacy. Also, if you don't know a premise is true, you can't rationally use it to support a conclusion. A premise must be true, or the logic isn't sound. Truth is absolute by nature though not necessarily complete. Therefore, ungodly thinking has severe

problems since no one can prove that a premise is true without divine revelation.

You sometimes call premises “assumptions.” However, you only momentarily assume the premises are true to evaluate the validity of the logical form. Once you evaluate the form, you make sure you have proved premises. If you can’t prove the premises are true, the logic isn’t sound.

### **Examples:**

Your premise is that elephants can fly. If you assume your premise is true, you can use elephants to transport packages by air. However, if you can’t prove that elephants can fly, then your logic is unsound.

Of course, there’s no proof elephants can fly, so the logic is unsound because you can’t prove the premises are true.

Your premise is Naturalism. You believe no spiritual realm exists. You believe God doesn’t exist. If you assume your premise is true, then any time you can make up a natural explanation you shouldn’t consider any spiritual explanations. However, if you can’t prove Naturalism, then your logic is unsound.

Of course, there’s no proof of Naturalism, so the logic is unsound because you can’t prove the premise is true.

## **Presume**

### **To assume something without proof**

Presuming is a form of argument-from-ignorance fallacy and an axiomatic-thinking fallacy. The best way to avoid presumption is to pray for wisdom and seek God’s will while keeping a thankful attitude toward God.

Sometimes, you need to know you can’t be certain since you don’t have enough information. In those cases, you need to weigh the risks of the various courses of action. Pascal’s wager is risk-analysis without presumption. You aren’t presuming if you analyze risk to decide what you’re going to do. You’re doing risk management.

**Related:**

presumption fallacy

**Presumptive**

Whatever is presumed

**Related:**

presumption fallacy, argument-from-ignorance fallacy,  
and axiomatic-thinking fallacy

**Probability**

The calculated numerical percentage of likelihood  
that something is true or false

**Proposition**

a statement

A statement that expresses an opinion

**Quantifier**

A word that indicates quantity

**Examples:**

- all
- none
- many
- some

**Racism Paradigm**

A paradigm in which various human races exist

Racism is contrary to the revelation that God gives in the Bible and also contrary to the revelation that God gives through science. We're all one race. We aren't divergent races struggling for survival against

each other since we're all descendants of the first two created people, Adam and Eve. While the ungodly historical story predicts there will be various human races, God's account of Creation predicts we'll find out that we're one race. Now, genetic research has confirmed the Bible, and we *are* one race. Scientific research now reveals the racism of Hitler, based on [Evolutionism](#), is false. While fallacies begin as thoughts, they expose themselves as words and deeds.

And yet, evolutionists are cherishing the zombie. Fake-news outlets and politicians perpetuate the myth by using the word "race," acting as if races were something real. They stir up racial hatred even though no races exist. Not only that, but there's only one skin color, brown in various shades. Although fake-news outlets and politicians aren't the only source of this error, evolutionary stories help enable the rationalization of racism.

## **Rational**

Sane

Dealing with reality as it is

The word "rational" means sane, but the word "rationalize" means to try to make the irrational seem rational or to try to make the insane seem sane. The word "Rationalism" refers to a philosophy. Rationalists claim the human mind can create knowledge without the benefit of either observation or revelation. They're perfecting the art of making up stuff and calling the made-up stuff true.

## **Rationalization**

Trying to make what isn't rational seem to be rational.

## **Relativistic Paradigm**

A worldview where there can be no absolute truth, right, or wrong.

**Examples:**

No one can know anything for certain.

There are no absolutes.

No moral absolutes exist.

Relativists commit the logical error of asserting a universal negative. They claim to know all things while they claim no one knows anything. Relativists claim no truth, right, or wrong exists. They're claiming the non-existence of the biblical God Who determines truth, right, and wrong. They're claiming to know the inner experiences of every person's spirit and soul, and yet they claim no one can know anything.

If no one can know anything, then no one can know no one can know anything. If no absolutes existed, then no one could know no absolutes exist. So a person who claims no one can know anything hasn't said anything. They've made a claim, but they're telling you not to believe their claim.

**Rhema**

A Greek word, meaning “utterance”

It's by hearing God's utterance that faith comes, but not everyone is willing to hear God's leading. And while all can hear God's utterance, some refuse to acknowledge Him.

**Scope**

In language, the range to which a **modifier** or adjective applies

An adverb or adjective with a narrow scope modifies a smaller part of the sentence. An adverb or adjective with a wide scope modifies a larger part of the entire sentence. Sometimes, you can't tell the scope from the words alone, but you would need to talk to the person who wrote the words or spoke the words to find out about the scope. The same holds true of nouns.

### **Example:**

Consider this familiar Scripture passage as an example:

For by grace are you saved through faith; and *that* not of yourselves: *it* is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.” ~ *Ephesians 2:8-9*

God has a scope in His mind for the words “*that*” and “*it*” as they appear in the same sentence with the words “grace,” “saved,” and “faith.” By context alone, the words “*that*” and “*it*” can refer to any of the following:

- grace
- saved
- faith
- grace and saved
- grace and faith
- faith and saved
- grace, saved, and faith

What is the scope? Some have claimed that only faith is “not of ourselves” and “the gift of God.” Others say only salvation is “not of ourselves” and “the gift of God.” Others say only grace is “not of ourselves” and “the gift of God.” Still others claim all three are “not of ourselves” and “the gift of God.”

You can sometimes know the scope by looking at another source of information. Consider the word “*grace*” means gift or unmerited favor. Next, consider that Scripture says Jesus Christ is the Author and the Finisher of your *faith*. (Hebrews 12:2) Then consider that Scripture says you’re *justified* freely by His Grace. (Romans 3:24) That’s a lot to consider, but you’re going to add two more factors. First, Scripture says every good and perfect gift is from above. (James 1:17) Second, faith, grace, and salvation are all good and perfect gifts. You can’t self-generate any of these.

## **Second Law of Thermodynamics**

The scientific law of matter and energy defining the way all matter and energy degrade to a lower state of

## usable energy with less information and organization

Natural processes move matter and energy toward the most probable arrangement. The most probable arrangement is the greatest disorder. Over time, everything winds down toward the greatest disorder. That's why cars don't look better every year, and they need constant repair. People get old. Houses fall apart. If you turn off your furnace in the winter, your house will get cold. If you turn off your air-conditioner in the summer, your house will get hot. Rocks don't roll up a hill without help. Books don't write themselves. You can store information in books, tapes, and DVDs, but information degrades over time. Time is one culprit, but the other is energy. Stored information degrades over time. The more energy you add, the more quickly the information degrades.

Energy degrades to its lowest form, and heat is the lowest form of energy. Heat spreads out. That's why you have heating and cooling costs. Eventually, all matter would break down to heat energy, and the forces of physics would spread the heat evenly throughout the universe at close to absolute zero. It would have done that if the universe was infinitely old, and none of us would be here. If the universe always existed, there wouldn't be any planets, stars, earth, sun, or anything else. Instead, equally disbursed heat at close to absolute zero would fill the universe. According to the Second Law, nothing inside the system can reverse this process of winding down. In other words, the universe can't wind itself back up. So, given enough time, the universe would be at thermodynamic equilibrium or what's called "the heat death."

What you observe couldn't arise by itself. Everything you observe supports the Second Law of Thermodynamics. (Video Explanation of the Second Law: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=soUZRgT-Ug8>)

### **Some other ways to state the Second Law of Thermodynamics:**

- The disorder of the universe tends towards a maximum level of disorder.
- Energy potential is constantly decreasing.
- Information decreases over time.

- Orderly systems become more disorderly over time.
- Randomness doesn't organize itself.

On the other hand, you can increase order in a part of the universe by building constraints into a system. For instance, refrigerators move heat out of the refrigerator, but unplugging the refrigerator will allow the refrigerator to come up to room temperature as the Second Law predicts. When the refrigeration system removes the heat from the refrigerator, the temperature difference between the space inside and outside the refrigerator increases. The energy potential increases as the temperature difference increases. The heat radiates in because of this energy potential. Then, the thermostat inside the refrigerator clicks on, which starts the motor and compressor to remove the heat from the refrigerator.

Potential means the heat moves toward coldness. Coldness is the lack of heat. If your hands are cold and you hold them in front of a fire, the fire will warm your hands. The heat of the fire moves into the coldness of your hands. Your hands get warm.

In the same way, the heat of the room goes into the cold refrigerator. But the refrigerator turns its motor on as the inside heats up. The motor runs a compressor using a refrigeration system to take the heat back out. And rather than defying the Second Law, refrigerators use the Second Law to cause increased energy potential by separating the cold inside from the heat outside. However, this increased energy potential takes greater energy potential from the rest of the universe to create the energy potential of the cold refrigerator. You pay the electric power company for the energy your refrigerator uses to keep your food cold.

Air-conditioners make a room cold while moving the heat to another area, usually outside. Assembly robots in factories create order by putting products together. At the same time, air-conditioners and robots use potential energy and order to create this order. If you could calculate all the potential energy and order of everything in the universe, overall potential energy and order of the universe decrease. That is, you have less available energy to do work, and everything becomes more random over time. Skilled hands of workers use nailing guns, nails, wood, and many other tools and

materials to produce houses. However, the Second Law of Thermodynamics is bringing the universe to lower potential and order. They're building a house. The house is a subsystem of the universe. The subsystem is changing to have more order. However, the overall system of the universe changes to have less order. Every example of a subsystem adding order has three characteristics:

- A mechanism exists for creating this order.
- An energy source exists, and the process of creating the order depletes the overall potential energy.
- A program to control the mechanism for creating this order exists.

These examples aren't exceptions to the Second Law of Thermodynamics. The Second Law doesn't prevent order since you can create order by applying a mechanism and program. That's what those builders are doing who build that house. However, a system must have both a mechanism and a program. Someone must design the program to create order or energy potential. Otherwise, the system will continue toward greater disorder, less information, and less energy potential. As stated, creating this order costs order and energy potential from other systems in the universe.

To claim exceptions to the Second Law of Thermodynamics exist is irrational since there's not one known example of an exception. Seeds grow into plants and other living organisms develop from embryos, but these aren't exceptions to the Second Law of Thermodynamics even though they are increases in complexity and order. They aren't exceptions because they follow a process that doesn't conflict with the Second Law of Thermodynamics. And when they increase the order and complexity within the growing seed and developing embryo, they do that using a program, a mechanism, and an energy source. So in all these examples, the Second Law is still working. However, a process increases order locally while decreasing the overall order and potential energy of the surrounding environment. This process needs the following three elements:

- Organisms need a plan to produce complexity and order. The DNA provides the plan.

- Organisms need a mechanism. The amazingly intricate factory of the cell provides the mechanism.
- Organisms need an external energy source. The sun ultimately provides the energy source.

To make that more understandable, consider that group of workers building a house. The building doesn't happen without a plan and a mechanism. For a simple mud house, the mechanism may be human hands, feet, and muscles. For a mansion, the mechanism includes machinery, tools, and workers. The builders may follow a detailed and exacting plan, or the plan might be ad hoc, designing it as they go. In modern houses, the mechanism often involves tools and machines, and the plan often involves blueprints and engineering diagrams.

In the same way, workers building a car in a factory use a mechanism and follow a plan. And those who build fences use a mechanism and follow a plan.

The external energy source of the sun won't build a house, car, or fence without a mechanism and a plan. However, Bill Nye implied that energy from the sun somehow creates complexity. Adding energy alone cannot create complexity. A mechanism must use the energy to carry out a plan. Without the plan and mechanism, energy increases entropy, it decreases complexity, organization, information, and energy.

None of that even approaches the problem of creating life from non-life. No human has ever created life by any energy source, mechanism, and plan, though people have spent a lot of money (tax dollars) trying. You observe life creating life using the extremely complex plan and mechanism from within the cells. However, no human has found a way to jump-start life from non-life.

Crystals and snowflakes aren't exceptions to the Second Law either. Crystals and snowflakes are examples of the Second Law. Molecules arrange themselves in the most probable arrangement and form crystals and snowflakes based on their magnetic charges. You could find other examples where you observe beauty or order that results from magnetic charges or other such created mechanisms. This beauty is one stage on the way toward randomness. And when

crystals and snowflakes form, the potential energy decreases in the same way potential energy decreases when a clock spring winds down or a rock falls down a steep slope. The information systems in cells aren't similar to crystals forming or snowflakes forming. The information systems of cells couldn't form by chance without a mechanism and a plan.

More to the point, you know, by revelation, that God created the universe. And you know, by revelation, that He now enforces all the natural laws with great faithfulness.

## **Secularistic Paradigm**

A paradigm that disallows God

The worldview of enforced ungodliness and keeping God out

A system of philosophy that believes all faith and worship except make-believe faith and human-intellect-worship should stay private and hidden

A system to establish the religion of ungodliness as the state religion

An extreme form of ungodliness that seeks to enforce ungodliness on everyone

The secularistic paradigm limits secularists to the ungodly thinking problem. This problem only affects ungodly thinkers. Ungodly thinkers base every thought on axiomatic thinking fallacies. Axiomatic thinking is reason that's based on made-up stuff, and secularists can't base thinking on anything other than made-up stuff. (pragmatic thinking.) Secularists can be dogmatic and emotional about their made-up stuff. However, their made-up stuff is still made-up stuff.

Secularism goes beyond atheism in that it not only refuses to acknowledge God but also tries to impose ungodly thinking and living on every person. It seeks, for instance, to keep God out of public life.

## **Seeking Christ**

Asking Christ to lead you and rule over you

Inquiring of Christ

Everyone who seeks Christ finds Christ, and every person who believes Jesus Christ for forgiving his or her sins is born again. When someone is born again, the new Christ-follower begins to see the kingdom of heaven. Then, going forward, born-again people have the opportunity to grow up into Christ as He leads, teaches, corrects, and purifies them moment by moment in every situation.

Those of us who experience spiritual rebirth come to Christ in sincerity, persistence, humility, and submission. He reveals Himself to you from one level of glory to the next in ever-increasing understanding. You confess your sin when you haven't done what He led you to do. If you do what He didn't lead you to do, you express your sorrow and again commit yourself to obedience to Him from that time forward. You ask Him to pardon your sins of the past, remove your sinful nature from you, and purify you. Then He answers your prayers and puts you back on the narrow way of obedience and submission so you can continue your journey of seeking Christ and moving toward purification.

Of course, you can't fool Christ. He's your Creator and knows you better than you know yourself. If you're sincere, He'll reveal Himself to you and forgive your sins. That means the Holy Spirit will incrementally take your fleshly natures away. The flesh dies, and the Holy Spirit forms Christ more fully within you as you follow His leading day by day and moment by moment. Because of that, you gradually gain discernment to hear His voice more clearly. You have increasing discernment between make-believe and reality as you mature in Him.

## **Set**

(a.k.a. Category or Class)

A category of things having one or more traits in common when these in-common traits of the category are different from the traits of other categories

## **Sin**

Straying from the narrow path that leads to eternal life

The word “sin” is translated from a word that means “straying from the Pathway.” Sin misses the constrained and narrow way that leads to eternal life. Of course, Jesus is the way, and Jesus is the life. So Jesus is the way to reach the goal, and He’s also the goal. Leaving the Way (Jesus) is the act of not receiving Christ’s leading and not responding in obedient submission.

The word “sin” is also translated from two other words. One means “to step across.” The other means “to slip across.” From experience, you know you can slip off the way that leads to life, or you can step off the way on purpose. You can look at sin from another angle. Sin is slavery to Satan, and sin is whatever isn’t of faith. All true good works are by grace through faith, so that means anything you do by your own will and power is sin. In other words, anything God didn’t tell you to think, say, or do is sin, and anything God didn’t think, say, or do within you and through you is sin. He created you to be a fountain of the living water of the Holy Spirit so God’s love continuously flows out from you. That’s what happens as He leads, you acknowledge, and you yield yourself to obey the Holy Spirit.

Therefore, whatever doesn’t originate from God is sin. Sin is a lack of God and a lack of obedience to God. And since God is love, sin is a lack of love and a lack of obedience to love.

You could also say sin is breaking the Law. The Law is spiritual. But love fulfills the Law, and you can sum up the Law as love. Jesus stated the most important commandment like this:

You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength and with all your mind.

Failure to fulfill the most important commandment is the worst sin because failure with this commandment makes it impossible to fulfill the second most important commandment:

You shall love your neighbor as yourself.

That's because God is love, and there's no love without God, and as stated, love fulfills the entire Law. So love is righteousness. Sin is the lack of righteousness. It's the lack of love. It's the lack of God's life, love, and righteousness flowing through you.

Since only God can do righteousness, you can only do righteousness when you submit to God. Jesus Christ is your righteousness. He's working through you, He lives in you and you in Him, and you walk in the Spirit.

To further understand the nature of sin, sin is falling short of God's glory. God planned glory for you and has a plan and purpose for every person. He'll complete His plan and purpose in the body of Christ and nowhere else. In this body, each follower of Christ has a place of service. You sin if you don't serve in your place. You sin if you fail to submit to the Holy Spirit. You sin if you don't discern the body of Christ.

Therefore, it's a sin to ignore God's good plan for you. God plans for you to come to His glory, but He doesn't force His plan onto you. Rather, you either willingly cooperate with the Holy Spirit, or you miss out on God's plan because of rebellion. And rebellion against God is as the sin of witchcraft. Even though the Holy Spirit won't force Himself on you, He may discipline you to bring you back to following Him, just as He did with Jonah.

That means anytime you *don't* commune with God, you're sinning, and you're sinning any time you add to or dismiss any of God's words

to you. You sin whenever you follow your own mind and will. But when you hear His voice and respond in submission, faith comes and gives you access to His grace, which, in turn, does His works of righteousness through you. Only then can you be righteous rather than self-righteous. As you yield to the Holy Spirit in this way, He'll transform you to be like Jesus.

You aren't saved by good works, but you're saved to good works. You are saved from sin, not to sin. You are saved to righteousness, not from righteousness or by righteousness.

## **Skepticism Paradigm**

A paradigm in which no one can know anything for certain

Skepticism is a universal negative. The disbeliever is claiming no one can know anything, and oddly enough, the skeptical claim is also a claim of extraordinary knowledge. To know no one can know anything would require knowing the inner workings of every mind of every person who's ever lived or will live. This claim of extraordinary knowledge is especially ironic because if no one can know anything, then no one can know no one can know anything. This problem makes skepticism self-refuting. In effect, skeptics call themselves liars.

However, most who claim to be disbelievers are selectively skeptical since they're skeptical about God, Jesus Christ, the Bible, and the spiritual realm, but yet they have dogmatic beliefs. For example, some believe in Scientism, Relativism, or Agnosticism. Some of them believe in Naturalism, Materialism, or Uniformitarianism. They're dogmatic. Many disbelievers believe the popular stories of ungodliness. They believe in the billions-of-years story. They believe in the big bang story. They believe in the molecules to humanity story. They believe these stories even though having dogmatic beliefs is contradictory to skepticism. Many feel certain the Creation and Flood events never took place.

Skeptics base their belief on the Münchausen trilemma. That's the ungodly thinking trilemma. According to the Münchausen trilemma,

ungodly thinkers must base all claims on fallacies. That's the world according to the Münchausen trilemma. However, it's a false trilemma since the trilemma falsely assumes the non-existence of the all-knowing God Who can't lie and Who reveals truth. A more accurate description of the problem is found in the ungodly thinking problem. Divine revelation is the only way to get around the ungodly thinking problem and the trilemma and thus, the only way to be rational.

## **Social Gospel**

A movement active since the late 1800s trying to apply personal "Christian ethics" to social problems, mostly through governmental programs or non-Church organizations

This false "gospel" works in many ways against Scripture. It calls good evil and evil good. It calls darkness light and light darkness. It gives the impression that Christ said, "Go get the government to coerce others to help solve the world's problems, but by no means reach into your own pockets." This false "gospel" uses the Overton Window to force ever-greater oppression on people by increasing the power and scope of government while progressives in the government get rich.

## **Sophistry**

The use of fallacies to deceive us

## **Sorites**

A series of **premises** (incomplete syllogisms) where the **predicate** of each incomplete syllogism's premise is the subject of the next

## **Socialism**

An economic system, based largely on envy, that seeks to punish achievers and reward non-workers

## **Soundness**

The integrity of reasoning

## **Sound Reasoning**

(a.k.a. Sound Argument)

Reasoning with true **premises** and valid form

Sound reasoning has true premises and valid form. True premises and valid deductive form guarantee a true conclusion that follows from the premises. If you use inductive reasoning with true premises and valid form, you have a hint that something might be likely. Abductive reasoning is a special case since abduction can spring from intuition or mere guessing. It's not a logical process, but it may yield truth. Intuition is driven by one of three sources: divine revelation, corrupt ideas from the fallen human mind, or lying demonic powers.

## **Statistics**

Analyzing reality using mathematical equations

Statistics can be helpful to suggest possible trends of the past and future based on observations in the present. These are possible trends, and rather than deductive reasoning, it's inductive reasoning. This reasoning often relies on assumptions. If it relies on even a single assumption, the premise isn't true. Without a true premise, the logic is unsound, and the conclusion is an opinion. Persuaders sometimes use statistics to deceive you.

Your assumptions and presuppositions spring from your worldview, so they seem real. They aren't real, but they seem real. They seem obvious to you. If you hear any ideas that conflict with your worldview, those ideas seem weird and unreal to you. They seem to be insane. That's why assumptions are deceptive in statistical analysis.

That doesn't mean statistics are bad. They can be helpful. Think of it this way. If you have some money set aside for retirement, you may try to guess how much inflation will bite into your money by the time you retire. You might take various factors to statistically calculate your odds of life-expectancy. Then you decide when you can afford to retire. You don't want to run out of money before you die. This is all highly speculative, but it's better than nothing.

If you retire and watch the money going out, you may discover you have to cut back on your expenses. The money is going out faster than you thought it would. These are practical ways you might use statistics in your own life.

### **Examples of Statistical Analysis:**

- weather forecasts
- emergency readiness for weather, tornadoes, or terror attacks
- predicting what might happen with disease or injury based on current habits and actions
- statistical effectiveness of drugs
- how genetics may affect one's future health
- who will win a political election
- how much an insurance company will charge for insurance in given circumstances
- calculations of inventory levels to maintain in retail stores
- the percentage of manufactured parts likely to be defective
- which sports team is more likely to win
- which stock is more likely to gain in value
- predicting the probability of a certain event happening

When you can repeatedly test the results of predictions, you can more accurately predict as you identify and refine the elements needed for prediction. You see this principle in weather forecasts, although, you also see the failings. Statistical analysis is much less reliable when you can't repeatedly test since no one can evaluate the accuracy. Even when you can test, you see that election, weather, and many other forecasts often fail.

## **Subject**

the expression that means the person, place, or thing of which something is affirmed or denied

The person, place, or thing discussed, described, or dealt with in a statement

## **Subset**

A Set within a set

A distinct part of the larger set

A subclass of a class

A subgroup of a group

A subcategory within a category

## **Syllogism**

A form of deductive reasoning

A series of statements in which **premises** lead to a conclusion

## **Tautology**

(a.k.a. tautologous statement)

A statement that no one can falsify simply because of its form since it simply repeats the same thing two ways

### **Form:**

All X are X.

X=Y; therefore, X=Y.

Y is either X or not-X.

**Examples:**

Human nature is human nature.

Boys will be boys.

Scientific observations are observed scientifically.

All who follow the Holy Spirit's leading are led by the Holy Spirit.

"All" means all.

It is what it is.

**Examples of another Type of Tautology:**

I'm either here or I'm not.

Either God exists or He doesn't.

Tautology isn't always a fallacy, and it may even hint at some deep meaning. However, you can't rationally use the tautology as proof for anything beyond itself. Tautologies don't get you to truth in themselves.

For instance, the Holy Spirit leads all who follow the Holy Spirit's leading, but that doesn't prove the Holy Spirit leads anyone. You don't use the tautology to prove the Holy Spirit is real and leading you. Instead, the Holy Spirit reveals His leading to everyone He's leading. And anyone can test Christ since every person who seeks Christ in sincere repentance, submission, respect, and persistence finds Christ. These people turn their lives over to Christ, and then the Holy Spirit leads, educates, and corrects them moment by moment in every situation as they yield to the Spirit of Christ.

**Related:**

Confusing Pseudo-Truth with Truth Fallacy

## **Theory**

A speculative explanation that's proposed based on three things: (1) substantial but limited observation,

## (2) assumption, and (3) storytelling

### **Detail:**

A scientific theory is just a story about observations. The observations aren't stories. The stories about the observations are pure fabrications. Theorists try to guess information beyond the observations. They try to guess why, how, and when. Theorists make up stories to fit the observations as much as possible and call their stories "theories." Scientific theories are made-up stories that fit the facts perfectly, but even fitting the facts perfectly doesn't assure the made-up stories are true. As a result, you can't rationally take theories as facts.

Scientific theories aren't supposed to conflict with any observations, and yet scientists call some stories "scientific theories" even though they conflict with observations. When theories conflict with known facts, scientists who want to save the theory make up ad hoc hypotheses (just-so stories) to explain away the conflicting facts. Bias often motivates them.

As scientists make up more just-so stories, the theory becomes increasingly complex. That's what happened with the Ptolemaic solar system theory when scientists thought the earth was stationary with the entire universe, including the sun, moving around the earth. Well, the theory had to explain planets and stars moving in circles. Scientists made up an imaginary material known as "ether." They said ether naturally moves in a circular motion. The movements of the sun, stars, and planets "proved" the existence of ether. The math worked perfectly. Of course, ether never existed, and now you laugh about how silly that was. Ether was just a rescuing hypothesis that scientists made up to save their sacred-cow story. Today, we have theories braced up in the same way with an imaginary substance known as "dark matter" and an imaginary energy known as "dark energy." Scientists claim they discovered and proved these two, but they're just rescuing hypotheses to save sacred-cow stories.

Since scientists created the story starting from the observations, the observations are likely to be largely in coincidence with the story. However, the scientists can't use this coincidence to prove the story is true. They commit the circular reasoning fallacy if they try to use

the observations to prove the story is true. That's why persuaders are irrational when they speak of evidence for a theory. In the same way, since scientists developed these two dark stories to make the big bang math work, they can't rationally use their success in making the big bang math work to prove the dark stories are true. The dark stories are fudge-factors, so scientists designed the properties by working the problem backward from the observations to the properties. That way, they got the math to work.

The human mind can make up stories endlessly. Scientists make up many stories about the distant past and call them "theories" even though these stories conflict with observations. Big bang, billions of years, and molecules to humankind aren't even good hypotheses since they need just-so story transfusions to keep them alive. Even truly scientific theories can only be a *possible* explanation at best.

## **Token**

Something that exists in reality

An example, in reality, of a type

A type is a concept of a token. For instance, you know the real Jesus Christ (token), but theologies about Jesus Christ are just types.

## **Truism**

A statement that's considered obviously true by many people even though no one can prove it to be true or false

### **Examples:**

- The patently false story of the 1% chimp-human DNA difference has helped to sell the big-bang-billions-of-years-molecules-to-humanity story.
- Pro-abortionists used the lie "5,000-10,000 deaths yearly in the U.S. due to illegal abortions" before Roe v. Wade. They later admitted that it was a useful number to win the court case when the actual number was 39

deaths, a number that has increased substantially since Roe v. Wade. However, by flooding the media with the “useful number,” abortion-minded persuaders pushed two truisms. They got people to believe many women were dying from illegal abortions. They got people to believe legalizing abortion would save lives. Now you know these were both lies. In many circles, these are still truisms, and abortion-minded persuaders use the phrase “woman’s health” as shorthand for this lie.

A truism is an unsupported claim. When persuaders use truisms as proof for anything they commit fallacies. Persuaders create truisms by constantly repeating the same message from multiple sources as the news organizations, entertainment sources, and schools have learned to do. Claiming a truism is true doesn’t make the truism true.

## **Truth**

Reality

## **Truth-Value**

The determination that a statement is either true or false

If a statement is partly true and partly false, you can break it into smaller statements, and each of those smaller statements is either true or false. The full statement may contain some clear statements, some implied statements, and some ambiguous statements. You can’t evaluate ambiguous statements for truth-value. However, if you can clarify the ambiguous statements, they will be either true or false.

## **Type**

A concept of something that exists in reality

A concept of a token

## **Undistributed**

## Not referring to all members of a class

A valid logical syllogism distributes the middle term at least once.

### **Undistributed:**

All cats are animals.

All dogs are animals.

Therefore, all dogs are cats.

“Animals,” the middle term, doesn’t appear in the conclusion.

### **Distributed:**

All cats are animals.

All dogs are animals.

Therefore, all dogs and cats are animals.

## **Uniformitarianism**

A worldview in which there was no Genesis Flood or Creation

A worldview that arbitrarily blocks out any processes that aren’t gradual, especially when considering history

A belief that natural laws have remained the same over time

Persuaders give “Uniformitarianism” several unrelated meanings and use the term for an equivocation fallacy or a package-deal fallacy. They define “Uniformitarianism” as the claim all the laws of nature have stayed the same throughout time. They make an exception for the moment of the supposed big bang when they say all the laws of nature came into being. However, they also define “Uniformitarianism” as the claim the Genesis Flood and Creation didn’t happen the way the Bible says it happened. They try to confuse you by blurring the meanings of these two very different claims.

First of all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. “Where is the promise of His coming?” they will ask. “Ever since your fathers fell asleep, *everything continues as it has from the beginning of Creation.*” But they deliberately overlook the fact that long ago by God’s word the heavens existed and the earth was formed out of water and by water, through which the world of that time perished in the Flood. But by the same word the heavens and earth that now exist are stored up for fire, being kept until the day of judgment and destruction of the ungodly. Beloved, do not let this one thing escape your notice: With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day. The Lord is not slow to fulfill His promise as some understand slowness, but is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar, the elements will be dissolved in the fire, and the earth and its works will not be found. ~ *2 Peter 3:3-11 Berean Study Bible*

God predicted the philosophy of Uniformitarianism and warned against it.

## **Ungodly Thinking Problem**

A universal problem in ungodly thinking that prevents ungodly thinkers from having sound reasoning since reasoning is either based on divine revelation or made-up stuff

The ungodly thinker is a thinker who isn’t acknowledging divine revelation, so if this thinker wants to prove a conclusion, how does this thinker prove the conclusion is true? A thinker who rejects divine revelation reasons based on made-up stuff (axiomatic thinking fallacies). A Christian who accepts the idea of divine revelation is often engaged in ungodly thinking as well. That’s not God’s will, but the flesh is weak.

Only deductive reasoning can prove a conclusion. Inductive reasoning can only yield an opinion, but it can be useful pragmatically. However, both deductive and inductive reasoning require true premises. You must know the premise is true. The premise is proof. It proves the conclusion. You must prove it since you can't prove a conclusion with something that isn't true. If the proof might not be true, it proves nothing. You can't prove the proof with another unproven premise. If you were to try that, you would have an infinite regression of unproven proofs. You would know nothing but you would only deceive yourself with the illusion of knowledge.

That's where most intellectuals spend their entire lives—in an illusion of knowledge. They're ever learning but never coming to a knowledge of the truth.

Other fallacies don't help but only mask the problem. Ungodly thinkers base every conclusion on irrational reasoning with a root fallacy of axiomatic thinking. They're just making up stuff and calling the made-up stuff true.

Those who want to reject God will point out they can survive pragmatically. They can fry eggs or build cell phones using assumptions. That's true. They can't rationally go beyond their five natural senses. They can't make any rational statements about morality, ethics, right, or wrong. They can't rationally reason about God, the Bible, or any other matter.

They often want to, of course. They want to be all-knowing. They want to say God can't reveal in a way that allows you to discern between His voice and all the other voices. But what would prevent God? They manufacture supposed "errors in Scripture" by using their made-up stuff to interpret Scripture. They use every form of deceitful trickery to blind their eyes from seeing God. In all that, they're lost. They're making up stuff and calling the made-up stuff true.

**Related:**

pragmatic thinking

## **Ungodly Thinking Trilemma**

(a.k.a. Münchhausen trilemma, Agrippa's trilemma, Albert's trilemma)

## An ungodly thinker's only choice for reasoning based on one of three fallacies

The trilemma states that ungodly thinkers must base their thoughts on one of three unpleasant choices. Those choices are axiomatic thinking, infinite regression, or circular reasoning. These three choices all resolve to axiomatic thinking fallacies, which are unsupported assertions.

Ungodly thinking is a problem since no one can know anything if everything resolves to an unsupported assertion. The trilemma includes two smokescreens to hide unproven claims, (1) circular reasoning and (2) infinite regression; however, many other smokescreens are also available.

The ungodly thinking trilemma is a false trilemma that Agrippa developed using the Naturalism axiom as the basis of thought, so the false trilemma falsely states that no one can know anything. Naturalism denies divine revelation presuppositionally and axiomatically. The ungodly thinking trilemma is a false trilemma because you have five choices in real life. But even if you include the other two possibilities, the trilemma oversimplifies the issue since it leaves out all other smokescreen fallacies that irrational thinkers use for thinking.

Skeptics have used the trilemma to claim no one can know anything. However, most skeptics also claim their own made-up stuff is exempted since it's "obviously true." Yes. That's insane. Your presuppositions seem obviously true to yourself since presuppositions come out of worldviews and your worldview seems more real than reality to yourself. You automatically filter out any part of reality that conflicts with your worldview. That's what causes the insanity. Only the Holy Spirit can tear down these strongholds in your mind and only if you yield yourself to Him.

God has provided every person a brute-beast mind so you can survive even without acknowledging divine revelation. This mind isn't capable of rational thought. It can't generate a true premise. However, it can react to sense data, and God gives humans instincts

as one of the ways He reveals reality. This mind has a limited ability to extrapolate beyond sense data. It can react to a ball flying through the air, calculate where the ball will be in a few seconds, and catch the ball. Dogs are good at that. Science reacts to sense data. It experiments and finds out what works. It makes computers and tests them. If they work, manufacturers produce and sell them.

This brute-beast mind can be brilliant. However, it can't rationally go beyond sense data by adding assumptions and axioms. For instance, it can't reason about morality, ethics, or spiritual matters without divine revelation. It can't reason about history without divine revelation. It can't interpret the meaning of Scripture.

So, although the trilemma claims no one can know anything, you can know whatever God reveals by divine revelation. However, ungodly thinkers reject divine revelation, so everything seems like an assumption to them, even what God truly reveals to them, and that's what causes their confusion. As a result, they can't discern between revelation and make-believe.

Even though it's a false trilemma, this ungodly thinking trilemma affects every person who isn't acknowledging God's voice and responding in submission, so it affects all ungodly thinkers. Only ungodly thinkers have this problem. They must choose between these three fallacies. Therefore, they must base every conclusion on fallacies. They can't reason rationally. They can't rationally assert any argument against divine revelation, God, or the Bible even though they often want to. Before they try to reason beyond their sense data, they must solve their own ungodly thinking problem.

### **History:**

The oldest record of the trilemma is from Agrippa the Skeptic about 2,000 years ago. So you know the trilemma as Agrippa's trilemma. In the 1700s, Baron Münchhausen brought up the problem again, so it's also known as the Münchhausen trilemma. In the 1900s, a German philosopher, Hans Albert, wrote about this problem, so it's also called Albert's trilemma. It's the [ungodly thinking trilemma](#) to be sure.

These philosophers observed the trilemma. They saw it in themselves and their ungodly peers. As long as they reasoned within their senses, they were rational. They weren't rational in the sense of being able to know any truth, but they could function pragmatically. As soon as they reasoned beyond what they could sense, they were irrational. When they tried to apply the trilemma beyond their immediate experience, they were irrational.

Here's the wild thing. They were irrational in applying the trilemma to everyone. They also were irrational when limiting thought to three choices. They left reality when they assumed Naturalism.

**Related:**

pragmatic thinking

## **Valid Reasoning**

### **Reasoning with correct form**

**Description:**

If reasoning is valid, that doesn't assure the conclusion is true. Reasoning is valid when its form assures a true conclusion *if and only if* the premises are true. Valid form doesn't guaranty a true conclusion, true premises, or sound reasoning for the following reason:

Reasoning with valid form can have premises not known to be true, but premises can't prove a conclusion unless they're known to be true.

Beyond that, a conclusion can be true without having the Truth. Jesus Christ is the Truth, and truth is a living flow of Himself through His people. Many people may parrot a true creed without ever knowing Jesus Christ, but there's no life if Christ isn't present.

Socrates identified many valid forms of reasoning and explained them in terms of syllogisms. However, you can reason with valid form without stating your reasoning in syllogisms. And yet, any reasoning with valid form can be formatted as a syllogism with valid form.

## **Validity**

The evaluation of the form of the reasoning to see if it assures the conclusion will be true if and only if the **premises** are true

## **Valid Logical Form**

A structure of reasoning that assures a true conclusion if and only if the **premises** are true

## **Verb**

A word used to describe an action, state, or occurrence

## **Wide Scope**

Applying a verb or adverb to a greater part of a sentence, statement, entity, or concept

A term with a wider scope would modify a larger part or the entire sentence, while a term with a narrower scope would modify a smaller part of the sentence.

# Further Study

Andrew A. Snelling, *Fossil Magnetism Reveals Rapid Reversals of the Earth's Magnetic Field*

<https://answersingenesis.org/astronomy/earth/fossil-magnetism-reveals-rapid-reversals-of-earth-magnetic-field/>

Answers in Genesis

<https://answersingenesis.org/>

Bible.org, *What is Apologetics*

<https://bible.org/seriespage/1-what-apologetic>

Bill Nye Debates Ken Ham - HD (Official)

<https://youtu.be/z6kgvhG3AkI>

Bodie Hodge, *Jesus Devastates an Old Earth*

<https://answersingenesis.org/theory-of-evolution/millions-of-years/jesus-devastates-an-old-earth>

brada011, *Social experiment - most people are sheep*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MEhSk71gUCQ>

Carl Kirby, *Evolution in Pop Culture*

<https://answersingenesis.org/media/video/evolution/evolution-pop-culture>

Carl Wieland, *Creation in the physics lab*

<http://creation.com/creation-in-the-physics-lab-creation-magazine-russell-humphreys>

CARM.org, *Recommended Websites*

<https://carm.org/recommended-websites>

Charles Jackson, *Star Formation and the Origin of the Universe*

[https://youtu.be/HUbjlK1CJ\\_Q](https://youtu.be/HUbjlK1CJ_Q)

Charles S. Price, *The Meaning of Faith*

<https://www.amazon.com/Real-Faith-Healing-Charles-Price/dp/0882707396/>

Charles S. Price, *The Real Faith*

<https://www.amazon.com/Real-Faith-Charles-S-Price/dp/1519588488/>

Charles S. Price, *The Real Faith for Healing*  
<https://www.amazon.com/Meaning-Faith-Classic-Writing-Mystery/dp/097079195X/>

Cornelius G. Hunter, *Darwin's Predictions*  
<https://sites.google.com/site/darwinspredictions/home>

Cowboy Bob Sorenson, *Honoring God in your apologetics*  
<https://thecreationclub.com/honoring-god-in-your-apologetics/>

Creation Ministries International  
<https://creation.com/>

cs.cmu.edu, *The Nature of Science*  
[http://www.cs.cmu.edu/~mdr2/classes/76\\_101\\_AA\\_Fall\\_05/readings/Hubble.htm](http://www.cs.cmu.edu/~mdr2/classes/76_101_AA_Fall_05/readings/Hubble.htm)

C. S. Lewis, *Miracles: How God Intervenes in Nature and Human Affairs*  
<https://www.amazon.com/Miracles-Intervenes-Nature-Human-Affairs/product-reviews/0020867603>

Del Tackett, *The Truth Project*  
<https://www.focusonthefamily.com/faith/the-truth-project/>

DirkHanson.org, *Neuroaddiction: The Reward Pathway*  
<http://www.dirkhanson.org/neuroaddiction.html>

Dirk Bartkowski, *Thoughts of a Pentecostal Scientist*  
<http://engagedpentecostalism.com/thoughts-of-a-pentecostal-scientist/>

Don Batten, *'It's not science'*  
<http://creation.com/its-not-science>

Elizabeth Howell, *Parallel Universes: Theories & Evidence*  
<https://www.space.com/32728-parallel-universes.html>

Encyclopedia Britannica, *Germ Theory*  
<https://www.britannica.com/science/germ-theory>

Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies  
[http://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia\\_of\\_Logical\\_Fallacies\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia_of_Logical_Fallacies_-_Scientia.pdf)

Exposing the REAL Creation-Evolution Debate

[http://RealReality.org/Exposing\\_the\\_Nye-Ham\\_Debate\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Exposing_the_Nye-Ham_Debate_-_Scientia.pdf)

Gary Wilson

<https://yourbrainonporn.com/research-articles-and-abstracts>

George Johnson, *Useful Invention Or Absolute Truth: What Is Math?*

<https://www.nytimes.com/1998/02/10/science/useful-invention-or-absolute-truth-what-is-math.html>

Greg Koukl, *“Misquoting” Jesus?*

[https://www.cbn.com/special/apologetics/articles/koukl\\_misquoting\\_jesus\\_bart\\_ehrman.aspx](https://www.cbn.com/special/apologetics/articles/koukl_misquoting_jesus_bart_ehrman.aspx)

Harvard, *Contagion: Historical Views of Diseases and Epidemics*

<https://library.harvard.edu/collections/contagion-historical-views-diseases-and-epidemics>

lanecc.edu, *Deductive and Inductive Arguments*

[https://www.lanecc.edu/sites/default/files/trio/deductive\\_and\\_inductive\\_arguments.pdf](https://www.lanecc.edu/sites/default/files/trio/deductive_and_inductive_arguments.pdf)

*In Christ All Things Hold Together, The Intersection of Science & Christian Theology*

<https://stlukesmanhattan.org/wp-content/uploads/2015/02/LCMS-CTCR-In-Christ-All-Things-Hold-Together-2015.pdf>

Infogalactic, *Inductive Reasoning*

[https://infogalactic.com/info/Inductive\\_reasoning](https://infogalactic.com/info/Inductive_reasoning)

Institute of Creation Research

<https://www.icr.org/discover/>

Jack Zavada, *Is There a Mathematical Proof of God?*

<https://www.learnreligions.com/mathematical-proof-of-god-701016>

Jake Hebert, Ph.D., *Big Bang Blowup at Scientific American*

<https://www.icr.org/article/10023>

James Tour, *On the Origin of Life*

<https://youtu.be/-Gsa58Rm8Sk>

Jason Lisle, *Keeping Faith in an Age of Reason*

[https://www.amazon.com/Keeping-Faith-Age-Reason-Contradictions-ebook/dp/B07652H8PS/ref=sr\\_1\\_2?ie=UTF8&qid=1545577881&sr=8-2&keywords=jason+lisle+books](https://www.amazon.com/Keeping-Faith-Age-Reason-Contradictions-ebook/dp/B07652H8PS/ref=sr_1_2?ie=UTF8&qid=1545577881&sr=8-2&keywords=jason+lisle+books)

Jason Lisle, *The Ultimate Proof of Creation*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CvRy6AjeyLcs>

James L. Melton, *Fables and Facts about Creation and Evolution*

<http://www.biblebaptistpublications.org/creationevolutiondebate.html>

Jerry Bergman, *Why the epidemic of fraud exists in science today*

<http://creation.com/science-fraud-epidemic>

John David Hoag, *Presuppositions (NLP Meta Model)*

<http://www.nlpls.com/articles/presuppositions.php>

John Matson, *What is Quantum Mechanics Good for?*

<https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/everyday-quantum-physics/>

Jonathan Sarfati, *The biblical roots of modern science*

<https://creation.com/biblical-roots-of-modern-science>

Ken Ham and Bodie Hodge, *Inside the Nye Ham Debate*

<https://www.amazon.com/Inside-Nye-Ham-Debate-Ken/dp/0890518572>

Ken Ham, *Was There Death Before Adam Sinned?*

<https://answersingenesis.org/death-before-sin/was-there-death-before-adam-sinned/>

Louie Giglio, *How can I know this is real?*

<https://youtu.be/xUEf-ci3WPY>

Mary Varney Rorty, *Treatise on Critical Reason*

<https://www.amazon.com/Treatise-Critical-Reason-Princeton-Library/dp/0691639779>

Max Tegmark, *Is the Universe Made of Math?, Scientific American*

<https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/is-the-universe-made-of-math-excerpt/>

Münchhausen Trilemma, *World Heritage Encyclopedia Edition*  
[http://self.gutenberg.org/articles/M%C3%BCnchhausen\\_trilemma](http://self.gutenberg.org/articles/M%C3%BCnchhausen_trilemma)

Patterns of Evidence  
<https://patternsofevidence.com/>

Petros Scientia, Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies  
[http://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia\\_of\\_Logical\\_Fallacies\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Encyclopedia_of_Logical_Fallacies_-_Scientia.pdf)

Quora.com, *Can mathematics prove the existence of God or intelligent design?*  
<https://www.quora.com/Can-mathematics-prove-the-existence-of-God-or-intelligent-design>

Quora, *Can math prove the existence of soul?*  
<https://www.quora.com/Can-math-prove-the-existence-of-soul>

Ravi Zacharias Ministries  
<https://www.rzim.org/>

Real Faith & Reason Volume One  
[http://RealReality.org/Real\\_Faith\\_and\\_Reason\\_Vol\\_1\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Real_Faith_and_Reason_Vol_1_-_Scientia.pdf)

Real Faith & Reason Volume Two  
[http://RealReality.org/Real\\_Faith\\_and\\_Reason\\_Vol\\_2\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Real_Faith_and_Reason_Vol_2_-_Scientia.pdf)

Real Faith & Reason Volume Three  
[http://RealReality.org/Real\\_Faith\\_and\\_Reason\\_Vol\\_3\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Real_Faith_and_Reason_Vol_3_-_Scientia.pdf)

Real Faith & Reason Scripture References  
[http://RealReality.org/Real\\_Faith\\_and\\_Reason\\_Scripture\\_-\\_Scientia.pdf](http://RealReality.org/Real_Faith_and_Reason_Scripture_-_Scientia.pdf)

Richard Paul and Linda Elder, *The Analysis and Assessment of Thinking*  
<https://www.criticalthinking.org/resources/articles/helping-students-assess-their-thinking.shtml>

Rick McGough, *Faith & Reason Made Simple*  
<https://creationtoday.org/product/faith-reason-made-simple/>

Russell Grigg, *Abandoned transitional forms*  
<https://creation.com/abandoned-transitional-forms>

Russell Humphreys, Ph.D., *How can Stars Billions of Light Years Away Appear to Adam & Eve?*

<https://youtu.be/SXFnXro6ObA>

Satoshi Kanazawa, Psychology Today, *Common misconceptions about science I: "Scientific proof"*

<https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/the-scientific-fundamentalist/200811/common-misconceptions-about-science-i-scientific-proof>

sciencelearn.org, *Tenets of the Nature of Science*

<https://www.sciencelearn.org.nz/resources/413-tenets-of-the-nature-of-science>

Science Museum Org, *Germ Theory*

<http://broughttolife.sciencemuseum.org.uk/broughttolife/techniques/germtheory>

*Scooby-Doo and the Skeptometer*

[https://youtu.be/YrGVeB\\_SPJg](https://youtu.be/YrGVeB_SPJg)

The Truth Project

<http://www.thetruthproject.org/>

Thomas DeMichele

<http://factmyth.com/factoids/thoughts-can-rewire-your-brain/>

Tim Newton, *Must We Presuppose the Truth of the Bible*

<https://thecreationclub.com/must-we-presuppose-the-truth-of-the-bible-tim-newton/>

Wikipedia, *Germ theory of disease*

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Germ\\_theory\\_of\\_disease](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Germ_theory_of_disease)

Wikipedia, *Scientific evidence*

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scientific\\_evidence](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scientific_evidence)

# **Book Club, Small Group Study, or Homeschool Questions**

These questions can be used for the entire book, or you can use these same questions for each section or chapter, depending on how you want to run your club, group, or class.

## **What Did You See?**

What new things did you learn in this reading?

What did God seem to be saying directly to you as you read?

What is the most important point in what we read, and why is it important?

## **Edification, Encouragement, and Comfort**

What was most comforting to you in this reading, and why is it comforting?

What did you find most edifying as you read, and why was it edifying?

What part of this reading was most encouraging or strengthening to you, and why did you find it strengthening or encouraging?

## **Going Forward**

How do you feel you'll be able to apply this reading in your life going forward?

What do you see as the hardest part of applying this reading to your life?

What do you see as the key to applying this reading to your life?

What questions do you still have? What points are still confusing?

What truth can you add to what was in the book?

Where do you think God is leading you based on what you read?

# Acknowledgments

First, and most of all, I acknowledge, thank, and glorify the Holy Spirit who was continually checking, correcting, teaching, and encouraging me as I wrote this library of books.

I thank my wife for listening to me, acting as a sounding board, giving her insights, and being patient with a time-consuming process that spanned several years and that was often difficult and demanding.

I owe a great debt of gratitude to those Christian leaders, teachers, and counselors who mentored me and taught me. None of the basic truths in *Real Faith & Reason* are from me. They all came through others who taught me. I met personally with most of these and also listened to their anointed teaching. Some, such as Charles S. Price and George Warnock have passed to the other side now, but I learned from their writings and I thank them for their faithfulness to the Truth.

Thank you to the hundreds of people who discussed real faith and reason with me. I thank the Christians who were supportive and the Christians who objected or disagreed. I thank the hundreds of atheists, agnostics, New Agers, witches, and warlocks who gave their best arguments in support of basing reasoning on made-up stuff and in opposition to basing reasoning on divine revelation. I can see how God orchestrated these many conversations to school me and teach me what I needed to know so I could write this book.

I thank my mother who read the first draft of all six books and gave me feedback and literary advice.

# About this Book



Many books have been written about reason and logic, but this one is unique. It's comprehensive but compact. It can be used as a reference text for quick look-up. And yet, it begins by exposing one of the most irrational concepts taught anywhere: the idea that a formally valid syllogism of any kind can assure sound logic without true premises.

When ungodly thinkers are faced with knowing they can't possibly reason to true premises, something snaps inside them. When they realize they have no path to true premises, they have trouble dealing with it. They start thinking they can make up stuff and their made-up stuff is then true stuff rather than made-up stuff. Then, they emphasized the form of logic. That's the best they can do. In most cases, they completely give up on logic and depend on emotion, threats, message-control, or other tricks.

However, they can never have sound logic without true premises. Sound logic must begin with truth. That's the main reason *The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational* is one of a kind.

## Free Stuff

Petros donated the eBook version of all his books to Real Reality, Inc., which is a non-profit organization. Real Reality makes the eBook version available for free.

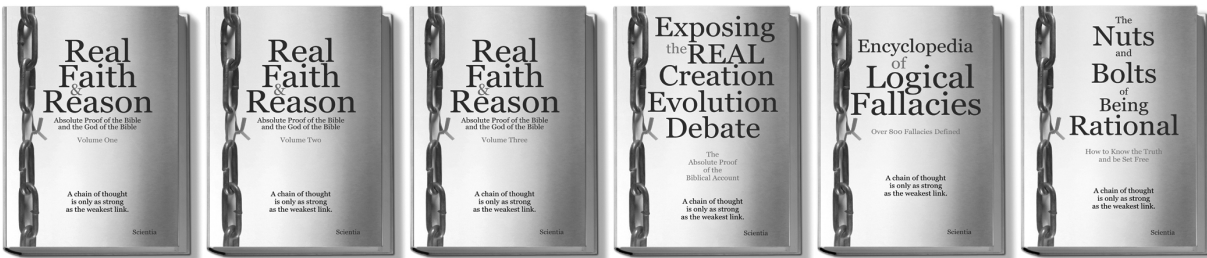
You can download the latest version of this eBook free at:

<http://RealReality.org/downloads> in various formats.

# How to Give these eBooks to Your Friends

- You can email them using links or by attaching the file.
- You can tweet them or DM them on Twitter.
- You can text the links from your phone.
- You can send them using any social media.
- You can put them on a USB drive and give them as a gift that way.

## The FREE eBooks



- **The three-volume set of *Real Faith & Reason* is a journey of spiritual growth and discernment.**
  - *Real Faith & Reason Volume One*
  - *Real Faith & Reason Volume Two*
  - *Real Faith & Reason Volume Three*
- ***Exposing the REAL Creation-Evolution Debate* points the way to knowing Christ through the example of a debate between two men over the topic of Creation versus Evolution. (Print version available on Amazon)**
  - *Exposing the REAL Creation-Evolution Debate*
- **The *Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies* details over 700 fallacies and logic terms with examples.**
  - *Encyclopedia of Logical Fallacies*
- ***The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational* goes into the nitty-gritty of the elements of rational thought and how to keep yourself from irrational traps in thinking.**
  - *The Nuts and Bolts of Being Rational*

You can download FREE Ebooks in Epub, Mobi, and PDF formats from:

<http://RealReality.org/downloads/>.



[Tweet This](#)

# **The Foundation of Real Faith & Reason Library**

The six books in this library have a sure Foundation. They aren't based on the author's credentials. They aren't based on research into what other supposed experts say. They aren't based on presuppositions, assumptions, or axiom. They're based on what you can easily check and test on your own.

We can't lay any other foundation than Christ Jesus. Jesus is real and knowable. Everyone who seeks Christ finds Him, so anyone can test the things written in this book. Christ leads, teaches, and corrects everyone who follows Him. Following Christ isn't a meaningless euphemism but a constant practice. Though we may be unfaithful in following Him at times, Christ is always faithful in leading. He's always here with us. He lives in us. In Him, we live and move and have our being. We know He exists because we know Him.

We're all well aware those who oppose Christ, those who hate the Light, will deny Christ leads, teaches, or corrects anyone. These don't want a close relationship with Christ. They don't want Christ directly guiding their lives. However, their denials don't affect reality. They always base their denials on made-up stuff, although those who deny Christ always have ways of making their made-up stuff appear to be factual or even Scriptural. Think about it. Based on made-up stuff, they are denying that millions of people who know Jesus Christ aren't experiencing what they're experiencing. We'll deal with various forms of denials in the book *Real Faith & Reason Volume Three*.

These six books are for born-again people. Everyone who is born again has come to Christ believing. The Father drew them to Christ, and they came to hear the voice of Christ. Faith came by hearing the voice of Christ through Scripture or a means of revelation mentioned in Scripture. We who follow Christ are on a journey to explore the wonders of the way God works with us and all who follow Christ.

What follows are some basic truths. We know these truths by divine revelation. We didn't have to assume anything. They aren't

self-evident. They are revealed truths. When God speaks to us, He fixes the truth within us by His utterance. What He says is the truth. He knows all truth and cannot lie.

God is a loving God Who wants all people to be saved. And yet, humans have free will. We can each resist God's leading. We can each refuse to respond to His voice. He reveals Himself to every person without exception through what He created. Some people deny this, but they have chosen their pathway. If any follower of Christ has ever witnessed to an unbeliever, that unbeliever has heard the voice of Christ through the follower of Christ. No follower of Christ can say "Jesus Is Lord" except by the power of the Third Person of the Trinity, the Holy Spirit. When an unbeliever rejects the testimony of the follower of Christ, that unbeliever is rejecting Christ directly. By rejecting Christ, the unbeliever is rejecting the Father God directly. We are on a journey to explore the wonders of the authority of Christ within each one who follows Christ.

God created a perfect world. No pain, suffering, death, unhappiness, sin, or any such problems existed in the original creation. At the beginning of creation, God created Adam and Eve, the first man and woman. Satan came in the form of a serpent and lied to Adam and Eve, the first people God created. Adam and Eve decided to believe Satan rather than God. They decided to obey Satan rather than God. A spiritual law (reality) exists that whoever you yield yourself as a slave to obey is the one whose slave you are. Adam and Eve became slaves of Satan. All their children became slaves as well. Since God had set Adam as ruler over all creation, the entire creation came under the power of Satan. That's how pain, misery, suffering, and death started. Only God could reverse the situation. As in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all be made alive.

While God is merciful, He is also just. He'll Judge everything. He's the only one who can judge rightly. Hitler will meet his righteous judgment. However, every person has sinned and fallen short of the glory of God. Whatever isn't of faith is sin, and faith comes by hearing God's voice. Who hasn't had thoughts or said words that came from a source other than God's leading? No one is innocent. Righteous judgment means the person who sins will die. The person who sins will die a physical death and a spiritual death. God has

revealed that hell is real. Even a moment in this spiritual fire would be beyond description. No earthly suffering could compare. No one goes to hell prepared for what hell is like.

God is love. He loves us. He didn't want that terrible end for us. From the start, God promised a Savior. Over time, God revealed He would have to pay the price of our sin. God was the only one who could pay that price.

To keep us from hell and restore us to Himself and His love, He took on the form of a human being as Jesus Christ. He never obeyed Satan once but only spoke the words of the Father and only did the acts of the Father. He reversed the sinful deeds of every person from Adam to the end of time. He was obedient to the point of suffering and dying on the cross while bearing the weight of the sin of every person who ever lived. The Father is Holy and had to turn away from His Son on that cross. In this, every part of the Godhead suffered on that cross. God suffered for your sin and mine. Christ overcame death. He rose from the dead and ministered to many after His resurrection. Then, He ascended into heaven. Later, He sent the Holy Spirit to lead and teach all those who follow Him. He ordained spiritual gifts, ministries, offices, and orders for the Church.

Christ doesn't force Himself on anyone. He gives everyone a chance. Everyone will have a chance to accept Him or reject Him. Those who reject Him are choosing hell. They don't want to serve God. God's nature is such that He doesn't force anyone into submission. Submission must be voluntary. God can't force submission or it isn't submission. Love must be voluntary. And yet, God tells us every knee will bow and every tongue will confess to the glory of God.

Therefore, we seek to persuade people to come to Christ. We extend an invitation for them to know Jesus Christ personally. Since God doesn't coerce anyone to come to Him, neither do we. We let people know about the good news. God reveals those who reject Christ do so because their deeds are evil. They love darkness rather than light. God's judgment will be absolutely just and fair, but He has paid the price. The good news is that Jesus paid it all. All who will

may come. All who come are born again. They can grow up into the fullness of Christ.

When we're born again, we're born as babies in Christ. After we're born again, God is looking for maturity. Our focus turns to growing. We want to grow to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ. And yet, many Christians remain as babies in Christ. They never experience spiritual growth.

Spiritual growth takes place by listening to the voice of Christ and yielding to Him. It's not by following a set of laws. It's not by learning some doctrines or theologies. It's by yielding to Christ. It's in allowing God to flow through us in love by the Holy Spirit. It's in discerning the body of Christ and walking in submission to the Holy Spirit. This growth is by grace, and the grace is through faith. On the other hand, failure to listen to God's voice causes spiritual immaturity. Speculations that go beyond what God revealed cause divisions in the church. Divisions in the body of Christ are a sign of spiritual immaturity.

God has a process for spiritual growth, and He reveals that process through Scripture. It all begins when He speaks to us. He speaks through Scripture or one of the means of divine revelation mentioned in Scripture. (John 10:27) Jesus is the good Shepherd, and He's always leading, teaching, and correcting those who follow Him and listen to His voice. (John 18:37) That Word that God speaks is the living Word, the Christ. (John 1:1) When God speaks, faith comes. (Romans 10:17) And faith gives us access into His grace. (Romans 5:2) Grace then does His works through us. (1 Corinthians 15:10) However, He won't force Himself on us, but we must yield the members of our bodies to Him. (Romans 6:13) God gives us the gift of righteousness. (Romans 5:17) The love of God flows through our hearts by the Holy Ghost. (Romans 5:5) He won't force us, but we must willingly submit to Him to the point of obedience as He plants the living Word into our hearts. (Matthew 13:3) His goal is to fully form Jesus Christ in us. (Romans 6:13) Our fleshly nature dies a bit with each time we respond in submission and obedience to the righteousness of Christ. (Mark 8:34-35) In this way, we are purifying the Lord Jesus Christ in our hearts. (1

Peter 3:15) The Holy Spirit is transfiguring us into Christ's image from glory to glory. (2 Corinthians 3:18)

As followers of Christ, we're all fully aware Satan will produce counterfeits of everything real in Christ. It's always been true. Through the biblical account, God shows us Satan brings false pastors, apostles, prophets, Bible teachers, signs, and wonders. We've seen false writings, "revelations," healings, and miracles. We're learning how to discern Christ's voice from all others. Our minds can deceive us. The fleshly natures of other people try to control us. Spiritual deceivers in places of authority oppose us. We're also learning to yield ourselves to Christ in willing submission and obedience. He's revealing who we are in Christ and how we fit into the body of Christ. As He purifies us, He's building a people of power and authority. God says we'll the church will unite. The church will have the same faith and knowledge. It will grow to full maturity in Christ. (Ephesians 4:10-13) We'll walk in total submission and obedience to Christ. The church will follow the orders of Scripture. Love will be complete.

Everyone who sincerely seeks Christ finds Christ. Although He forces Himself on no one, He rejects no one. Rather, He freely pardons and sets us free from the sinful nature, peer pressure, and the deceitful power of the devil as we yield ourselves to His grace and righteousness. And Christ reveals Himself to every person. He reveals Himself through creation. He reveals Himself through those who walk in the Spirit. Christ leads, teaches, and corrects every person who follows Him. He interprets our observations and experiences and shows us the way. He's the Source of every good thing including knowledge, understanding, wisdom, righteousness, and faith. What He says is the truth. We can't have knowledge, understanding, wisdom, righteousness, or faith without Christ. We can't have truth or love without Christ.

God is light. In Him is no darkness at all. The Logos, or Utterance, is the Light that lights every person who comes into the world. Christ is the Light of the world. When we listen to Christ's voice, faith comes. Faith gives us access to His grace. When we yield to His grace so He says His words and does His works through us, we are also the light of the world. That is, Christ in us is the Light of the world.

Every person benefits from the Light of Christ. Without that Light, we would all be in the dark. Without that Light, the human mind has no rational way to reason. Without the Light of Christ, people can react to what's around them but not in a rational way. Without the Light of God, people can make up stuff, but they can never base reasoning on true premises. The Light gives them a way to know what's right and what's true. The Light of Christ shows the difference between reality, preconceptions, and imagination. Even those who haven't yet accepted Christ as Savior and Lord benefit from the Light of Christ.

Those who hate the Light and love darkness turn from the Light. When the children of Light begin to shine, those who love darkness turn even further from the Light. They try to suppress the Light. When any person fails to acknowledge Christ or yield to His Light, that person turns toward darkness. At a certain point, God lets that person go. God withdraws Himself and His Light from them. This generally happens by degrees, but it can happen quite suddenly. They then enter darkness in which they increasingly can't tell the difference between right and wrong, good and evil, truth and lie, or reality and make-believe. We're seeing the children of Light and the children of darkness coming to maturity on a massive scale throughout society now. The war is between Christ and the spirit of antichrist.

The children of Light are learning to hear the voice of Christ and to yield to His righteousness in willing submission and obedience. They're learning to discern the body of Christ, and the love of God is being shed abroad in their hearts by the Holy Ghost.

The children of darkness are trying to smother the children of Light. They hate the Light. They seek power and control. They don't want the word of the Lord. They seek to distort and twist the utterance of God. They ridicule. They oppress. They threaten. They love to listen to ungodly counselors and false teachers in the news media, the universities, the entertainment venues, and even in some churches. They willingly allow themselves to be drawn into a downward spiral of slavery to alcohol, drugs, sexual compromises, perversions, witchcraft, disorder, and other sins. They gladly enter into the idolatry of focusing on things other than Christ and His

righteousness. Some of them even think they can destroy the body of Christ.

God will prevail. Though many followers of Christ are suffering from persecution and some have even given their lives, Christ will be victorious. Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer persecution. God uses our suffering as part of His process to transform us. Refining gold always requires heat, and the dross must be removed. In the end, every scar will become a badge of honor.

## **About the Author**

Petros B. Scientia is the pen name of a man who pastored a local church for thirty-three years and who has chosen to keep his writing work separate from his work of shepherding a flock. Petros has also been blogging for two decades, encouraging unbelievers and believers alike to know Jesus Christ. Petros also analyzed and documented systems professionally for twenty years. These systems included business, mechanical, electrical, and software systems. He did this while pastoring a local church.

God shows Petros how things work at the most basic level. What seems complex and hard to understand becomes simple. God does this with both Scriptural truth and material facts.

When God began putting it on Petros' heart to write this book, Petros didn't feel qualified. He still doesn't feel qualified. And yet, God continued to urge him to write it. Petros tried to find someone else more qualified to write the book. He wasn't able to. Petros previously wrote ten- or twenty-page descriptions at most. To write a book seemed insurmountable. The book became six books under the guidance of the Holy Spirit. Petros is concerned that some of his own ideas may have made it into these books. If any human ideas did get in, Petros prays the reader will discern and discard whatever isn't from the Holy Spirit.